THE ART OF RACING IN THE RAIN

A NOVEL

GARTH STEIN



The Art of Racing in the Rain

A Novel

Garth Stein

HarperCollins e-books

"Wi th your mi nd power your determi nati on, your i nsti nct, and the experi ence as well you can fly very hi gh."

—AYRTON SENNA

Contents

Epigraph

Gest ures are all that I have; somet imes they must be... He picked me out of a pile of puppies, a... Wery gent l.yLike there are eggshells on your pedals," Denny... Denny moved me far from the farm in Spangle, to... Monkeys have thumbs. Her name was Eve, and at first I resented how...

- One summer Sat ur day aft er noon, aft er we had spent the morning...
- **9** A coupl e of years aft er we moved int o t he new...

When it was just Denny and me, he used to...

<u>10</u>

I deal ly driver is a mast er of all that is...

<u>11</u>

When I was locked in the house suddenly and firmly...

<u>12</u>

Eve's condit ion was el usive and unpredict able. One day she would...

<u>13</u>

They sit in the trees and on the electric wires...

<u>14</u>

The clues were all there, I simply ltadadd them...

15

When Denny went away the following week, we went to...

<u> 16</u>

The weeks tripped by with tremendous haste, as if digging...

17

Your car goes where your eyes go.

<u>18</u>

In Mongolia, when a dog dies, he is buried high...

19

It was hours before Denny returned, and he returned alone.

<u>20</u>

I was not privy to much, being a dog. I ...

<u>21</u>

She made me wear the bumblebee wings she had worn...

22

Soon, Labor Day weekend came, and aft er that, Zoë was...

23

Ever yt hing t hey said made sense, but none of it added...

<u>24</u>

For the first few weeks of our new arrangement —Denny and...

<u>25</u>

In February he black pit of wint, ewe went on...

<u>26</u>

That year we had a cold spell in each wint er...

27

Six mont hs came and six mont hs left and Eve was...

28

In the morning, Denny didti'know about Eve, and I...

29

For Eve, her deat h was the end of a painful ...

30

Wit h experience, a driver adjusts his understanding of how a...

31

Zoë insist ed on going to school the next dand...

<u>32</u>

I spent most of the day hanging out in the...

<u>33</u>

Much of what happened to Denny regarding the cust ody suit ...

<u>34</u>

They took him to a small room with agear.

<u>35</u>

Hands are the windows to a man's oul.

<u>36</u>

I love very few things more than a nice long...

<u>37</u>

The morning aft er Eve'funeral, I could barely move. My...

<u>38</u>

Because of the criminal chaes against Dennythe Twins had...

39

There was an occasion that summer when Denny found a...

40

Oh, a breat h of Sept ember!

<u>41</u>

The flash and fury of a sprint race are grand.

<u>42</u>

How quickl y

43

"This is not a conversation I like to have," Mark...

<u>44</u>

The sol ut ion had been put to Denny by Mark Fein:...

<u>45</u>

Denny paid his account with Mark Fein. Shortly afterward, Mark...

46 I t was an especially **fdict**ult winter for me. Perhaps it ... 47

Ayrt on Senna did not have to die.

48

Separate entrances for cats and dogshat's what I remember...

49

Days lat erA week. Two. I don't know Aft er Dennys'...

50

The summer of my t ent h bir t hday came along and t here...

51

"You need to go out? Let 'go out."

The coupl e who stood in the door way were entirely for eign...

53

Had I known I was meet ing Denrypar ent s, I might ...

54

A driver must have fait h. I n his tal ent, his judgment...

55

So much informat ion came out in the following days, thanks...

"All rise," the baif tfalled out, such old-fashioned formality in...

57

The very next dayMr. Lawrence informed Denny that the Evil ...

<u>58</u>

The dawn breaks gent ly on the horizon and spills its...

Imola, Italy

After it is all oyefter the last race has...

Acknowledgments

About the Author

Other Books by Garth Stein

Credits

Copyright

About the Publisher

Gest ures are all that I have; sometimes they must be grand in nature, while I occasionally step over the line and into the world of the mel odramatic, it is what I must do in order to communicate clearly at effectively I norder to make my point understood without question. I l no words I can rely on because, much to my dismany tongue was designed long and flat and loose, and therefore, is a horribl feine to effective tool for pushing food around my mouth while chewing, and an even less effective tool for making clever and complicated polysyllabic sounds t can be linked together to form sentences. And that yell in here now waiting for Denny to come home—he should be here soon—lying on the cool tiles of the kitchen floor in a puddle of my own urine.

I 'm old. And while I 'm very capable of getting of thers' not the way I want to go out. Shot full of pain medication and steroids to reduce the swelling of my joints. Whon fogged with cataracts. How plasticky packages of Doggie Depends stocked in the pant. The sure Denny would get me one of those little wagons I 've seen on the streets, the onesther added the hindquarters so a dog can drag his ass behind him when thing start to fail. The thiumiliating and degrading. I 'm not sure is invorse that dressing up a dog for Halloween, but sittlese. He would do it out of love of course. I 'm sure he would keep me alive as long as he possibly could body deterior at ing, disint egrating around me, dissolving untilsthere'

not hing left but my brain floating in a glass jar filled with clear liquic eyeballs drifting at the surface and all sorts of cables and tubes feeding remains. But I dom'want to be kept alive. Because I know whate'xt. I 'vous een it on TVA document ary I saw about Mongolia, of all places. It we the best thing I 've ever seen on television, other than the 1993 Grand of Europe, of course, the greatest automobile race of all time in which Ayrt on Senna proved himself to be a genius in the rain. After the 1993 Grand Prix, the best thing I 've ever seen on TV is a document ary that explained everything to me, made it all clean dthe whole truth: when a dog is finished living his lifetimes as a dog, his next incarnation will be man.

I 've al ways felt al most human. I 've al ways known that there' something about me that different than other dog Sure, I 'm st fed into a dog's body, but that just the shell slwhat's inside that important The soul. And my soul is very human.

I am ready to become a man now hough I realize I will lose all th have been. All of my memories, all of my experiences. I would like to them with me into my next life—there is so much I have gone through the Swift family—but I have little say in the matter can I do but for c myself to remember? Ty to imprint what I know on my soul, a thing the has no surface, no sides, no pages, no form of any kind. Carry it so deepl in the pockets of my exist ence that when I open my eyes and look down my new hands with their thumbs that are able to close tightly around fingers, I will already knowwill already see.

The door opens, and I hear him with his familiar, Myo, Zo!" Usually I can't help but put aside my pain and hoist myself to my feet, wag my t sling my tongue around, and shove my face into his crotch. It takes humanlike will power to hold back on this particular occasion, but I do hold back. I don't get up. I'm acting.

"Enzo?"

I hear his footsteps, the concern in his voice. He finds me and looks down. I lift my head, wag my tail feebly so it taps against the Iflpology the part.

He shakes his head and runs his hand through his hairts down the plastic bag from the grocery that has his dinner in it. I can smell roas chicken through the plast itonight he's having roast chicken and an iceberglettuce salad.

"Oh, Enz," he says.

He reaches down to me, crouches, touches my head like he does, alor the crease behind the earnd I lift my head and lick at his for earm.

"What happened, kid?" he asks.

Gest ur es cant' expl ain.

"Can you get up?"

I tryand I scramble. My heart takes, bringes ahead because no, I can't. I panic. I thought I was just acting, but I real gytcap? Shit. Life imit at ing art.

"Take it easykid," he says, pressing down on my chest to cal m me. "I 've got you."

He lifts me easil he cradles me, and I can smell the day on him. I c smell everything hedone. His work, the auto shop where hebehind the counter all dayst anding, making nice with the customers who yell at his because their BMWs done work right and it costs too much to fix them that makes them mad so they have to yell at someone. I can smell his He went to the I ndian beft he likes. All you can eat sIcheap, and sometimes he takes a container with him and steals extra portions of t tandoori chicken and yellow rice and has it for dinnero. I can smell bee He st opped somewhere The Mexican rest aurant up the hill. I can smell tortilla chips on his breath. Now it makes sense. Uşulalın yexcellent wit el apsed time, but I was maying at tention because of my emoting.

He pl aces me gent l y in t he t ub and t ur ns on t he handhel d shower t l and says, "E as yE nz."

He says, "Sorry I was late. I should have come straight home, but guys from work insisted. I told Craig I was quitting, and..."

He trails of and I realize that he thinks that my accident was because was late. Oh, no. That is not how it was meant. It is hard to communicate because there are so many moving parts. Therperesent at ion and there interpretation and they're so dependent on each other it make things very difficult. I didn'want him to feel bad about this. I wanted he to see the obvious, that sitokay for him to let me go. He been going through so much, and he finally through it. He needs to not have me around to worry about anymore. He needs me to free him to be brilliant.

He is so brilliant. He shines. Medeaut iful with his hands that grab things and his tongue that says things and the way he stands and chews food for solong, mashing it into a paste before he swallows. I will mi and little Zoë, and I know they will miss me. But the leans entimentality cloud my grand plan. After this happens, Denny will be free to live his and I will return to earth in a new form, as a man, and I will find him shake his hand and comment on how talented he is, and then I will winh him and say, "Enzo says hello," and turn and walk quickly away as he ca after me, "Do I know you?" He will call, "Have we met before?"

Aft er the bath he cleans the kit chen floor while I whet gives me my food, which I eat too quickly again, and sets me up in front of the TV when the prepares his dinner

"How about a tape," he says.

"Yes, a tape," I replbut of course, he doesn' hear me.

He put s in a video from one of his races and he turns it on and we wat ch. I stone of my favorites. The racetrack is dry for the pace lap, and then just after the green flag is waved, indicating the start of the race, is a wall of rain, a torrential downpour that engulfs the track, and all cars around him spin out of control into the fields and he drives throug them as if the rain didn'fall on him, like he had a magic spell that clear water from his path. Just like the 1993 Grand Prix of Europe, when Sei passed four cars on the opening lap, four of the best championship drive

in their championship cars—Schumachel Wendlinger, Hill, Prost—and he passed them all. Like he had a magic spell.

Denny is as good as Art on Senna. But no one sees him because he has responsibil it ies. He has his daught Zoë, and he had his wife, Eve, who was sick until she died, and he has me. And he lives in Seattle when he should live somewhere else. And he has a job. But sometimes when he gaway he comes back with a trophy and he shows it to me and tells me al about his races and how he shone on the track and taught those other di in Sonoma or Texas or Mid-Ohio what driving in wet weather is really about.

When the tape is over he says, "Lætgo out," and I struggle to get uj

He lifts my but t int o the air and centers my weight over my legs ar then I 'm okayTo show him, I rub my muzzle against his thigh.

"There's my Enzo."

We leave our apart ment; the night is sharp, cool and breezy and cleave only go down the block and back because my hips hurt so much, and Denny sees. Denny knows. When we get back, he gives me my bedt ime cookies and I curl into my bed on the floor next to his. He picks up the phone and dials.

"Mike," he says. Mike is Dennys friend from the shop where they bot work behind the count exCustomer relations, they call it. Mikeittle gu with friendly hands that are pink and always washed clean of smell. "No can you cover for me tomorrow? I have to take Enzo to the vet again."

We've been going to the vet a lot recently to geterdiff medicines tha are supposed to help make me more comfortable, but theytdomally And since they don't, and considering all that went on yesterIdaye set the Master Plan in motion.

Denny st ops t al king for a minut e, and when he st art s again, his voic doesn't sound like his voice. Istr'ough, like when he has a cold or algies.

"I don't know" he says. "I 'm not sur esita'r ound trip visit."

I may not be able to form words, but I underst and Almehi.'m surprised by what he said, even though I set it up. For a moment, I 'm surprised my plan is working. itst he best thing for all involved, I know I ts'the right thing for Denny to do. Is cone so much for me, my whole life. I owe him the gift of setting him free. Letting him as cendual was good run, and now its over; whats' wrong with that?

I close my eyes and list en vaguel y in a half sleep as he does the thin he does before he sleeps each night. Brushing and squirting and splashing So many things. People and their rituals. They cling to things so hard sometimes.

He picked me out of a pile of puppies, a tangled, rolling mass of paws ar ears and tails, behind a barn in a smelly field near a town in eastern Washingt on called Spangle. I don'emember much about where I came from, but I remember my mot hankeneavy bit chof a lab with pendulous teats that swung to and fro as mylittermates and I chased them down across the yard. Honest, by mother didn's seem to like us much, and she was fairly indifferent to whether we ate or starved. She seemed relieved whenever one of us left. One fewer yipping mammal tracking her down to bleed her of her milk.

I never knew my fat hei The people on the farm told Denny that he was shepher d-poodle mix, but I don'believe it. I never saw a dog that lool like that on the farm d while the lady was nice, the alpha man was a mean bast ard who would look you in the eyes and lie even if telling the truth would serve him bet. Here expounded at length on the relative intelligence of dog breeds, and he firmly believed that shepher ds and poodles were the smart ones, and therefore would be more desirable—more valuable—when "bred back to a lab for temperament." All a bunc junk. Everyone knows that shepher ds and poodles at easy pecially smart. They're responders and reactors, not independent thinkers. Especially blue-eyed sheep dogs from Down Under that people make such a fuss ov

when t hey cat ch a Frisbee. Sure, t hey're cl ever and quick, but t heyt don't hink out side t he box; t hey're all about convention.

I 'm sure my fat her was a terribercause terriers are problem sol ver They'll do what you tell them, but only if it happens to be in line with they want ed to do anywayThere was a terrier like that on the farm. An Airedal e. Big and brown-black and tough. No one messed with him. He didn't stay with us in the gated field behind the house. He stayed in the down the hill by the creek where the men went to fix their tractors. B sometimes he would come up the hill, and when he did, everyone steered ear Word in the field was he was a fighting dog the alpha man kept separate because he'd kill a dog for stiming in his direction. He'd rip the fit from a nape because of a lazy glance. And when a bitch was in heat, he'd mount her good and go about his business without a thought about who wat ching or who are d. I 've oft en wonder ed if he sired me. I have his brown-black coloring and my coat is slightly wainty people frequently comment that I must be part tell ike to think I came from a determine gene pool.

I remember the heat on the day I left the farm. Every day was hot Spangle, and I thought the world was just a hot place because I never what cold was about. I had never seen rain, didknow much about water Water was the struin the buckets that the older dogs drank, and it was tstufthe alpha man sprayed out of the hose and into the faces of dogs when might want to pick a fight. But the day Denny arrived was exceptionall hot. My littermates and I were tussling around like we always did, an hand reached into the pile and found my scrutnd suddenly I was danglin high in the air

"This one," a man said.

It was my first glimpse of the rest of my life. He was slwitched ong and lean muscles. Not a lgarman, but assertive. He had keen, icy blue eyes. His choppy hair and short, scrlyfbeard were dark and wir, dike an Irishterrier

"The pick of the litt, ert he lady said. She was nice; I al ways liked it when she cuddled us in her soft lap. "The sweet est. The best."

"We were thinkin' a keepin"im," the alpha man said, stepping up with his big boots caked with mud from the creek where he was patching a fence. That was the line he always used. Hell, I was a pup only a dozen weeks old, and I'd already heard that line a bunch of times. He used it to more money.

"Will youlet him go?"

"Fur a price," the al pha man said, squint ing at the **bky**ached a pale blue by the sun. "Fur a price."

"Ver y gent l.yLike there are eggshells on your pedals," Denny al ways sa "and you don't want to break them that's how you drive in the rain."

When we wat ch videos toget her—which we've done ever since the vefirst day I met him—he explains these things to men(T) Balance, anticipation, patience. These are all vital. Peripheral vision, seeing this you've never seen before. Kinest het ic sensation, driving by the seat of t pants. But what I 've all ways liked best is when he talks about having r memory. No memory of things he'd done just a second before. Good or bad. Because memory is time folding back on it sel 6. Hemember is to disengage from the present. In order to reach any kind of success in automobil eracing, a driver must never remember

Which is why drivers compulsively record their every move, their erace, with cockpit cameras, in-car video, data mapping; a driver cannot be witness to his own great nesshis is what Denny says. He says racing is doing. It is being a part of a moment and being aware of nothing else but hat moment. Reflection must come at a later time. The great champio Julian SabellaRosa has said, "When I am racing, my mind and my body working so quickly and so well toget, Hermust be sure not to think, or e I will definitely make a mistake."

Denny moved me far from the farm in Spangle, to a Seattle neighborhoc called Leschi where he lived in a little apart ment he rented on Lake Washington. I didte enjoy apart ment living much, as I was used to wide open spaces and I was very much a puppy; still, we had a bal cony that overlooked the lake, which gave me pleasure since I am part water dog my mother's side.

I grew quickly and during that first yeadenny and I foged a deep fondness for each other as well as a feeling of trust. Which is why I was urprised when he fell in love with Eve so quickly

He brought her home and she was sweet smelling, like him. Full of fer ment ed drinks that made them both act fundage were hanging on each other like they had too mand othes between them, and they were pullin at each other ugging, bit ing lips and jabbing fingers and yanking at hairlel bows and toes and saliva. They fell onto the bed and he mount ed her a she said, "The field is fertile—beware!" And he said, "I embrace the fertility And he plowed the field until it grasped the sheets in its fists arched its back, and cried out with joy

When he got up to spl ash in the bathroom, she patted my head, which hover ed low to the floome still being immature at just over a year old.

a little bit intimidated by all the screaming. She said,dom't mind if I love him, too, do you? I won'come bet ween you."

I respect ed her for asking, but I knew t hat would hed come bet ween us, and I found her preempt ive denial to be disingenuous.

I tried not to actf-pfitting because I knew how infat uated Denny wa with her But I admit I was less than embracing of her presence. And because of that, she was less than embracing of mee Where both satellite or biting Dennys sun, struggling for gravitational suprence for yourse, she had the advantage of her tongue and her thumbs, and when I watched he kiss and fondle him sometimes she would glance at me and wink as if to gloat Look at my thumbs! See what they can do!

Monkeys have thumbs.

Practically the dumbest species on the planet, next to the duck-bil plat ypus, who make their dens under water even though they breatheth The plat ypus is horribly stupid, but is only slightly dumber than a mc Yet monkeys have thumbsThose monkey-thumbs were meant for dogs. Give me my thumbs, you fucking monkey(I love the Al Pacino remake of Scarface very much, though it does to compare to the odfather movies, which are excellent.)

I wat ch too much T.When Denny goes away in the mornings, he turn it on for me, and its' become a habit. He war ned me not to wat chall, day but I do. Fortunat, they knows I love cars, so he lets me wat chalot of Speed Channel. The classic races are the best, and I especially likel Tao One. I like NASCAR, too, but I prefer it when they race on the road circuits. While racing is my favor ite, Denny told me it was good for me have variety in my life, so he often puts on other channels, which I enjoyery much as well.

Somet imes if I 'm wat ching t he Hist or y Channel or t he Discover y Channel or PBS or even one of t he kidshannel s—when Zoë was little I end up spending hal f t he day t r ying t o pr y goofy jingles out of my brain-

learn about other cultures and other ways of life, and then I start thi about my own place in the world and what makes sense and what doesn'

They talk a lot about Darwin; pretty much every educational chann has some kind of show about evolution at some point, and its'ually reall well thought out and researched. Howeverdont understand why people insist on pitting the concepts of evolution and creation against each otl Why can't they see that spiritualism and science are that bodies evolve and souls evolve and the universe is a fluid place that marries t both in a wonderful package called a human being. Whatwrong with that idea?

The scient ific theorists go on and on about how monkeys are the clo evolutionary relative of people. But thapeculation. Based on what? Based on the fact that certain ancient craniums have been found to be similar to modern man? What does that prove? Based on the fact that some primates walk on two feet? Being bipedal is even an advantage. Look at the human foot, full of bent toes and in deposits and pus draining from ingrown claws that artereven hard enough to scratch at the earth. (And yet, how I yearn for the moment my soul inhabits one of the poorly designed bipedal bodies and I, too, as sume the health concerns man!) So what if man's body evolved from the monkeys? Whether he cam from monkeys or fish is unimportant. The important idea is that when the body became "human" enough, the first human soul slipped into it.

I 'll give you a t heor y: Marc'l os est rel at ive is not t he chimpanzee, at the TV people bel ieve, but is, in fact, t he dog.

Wit ness my l ogic:

Case-in-Point #1: The Dew Claw

It is my opinion that the so-called dew clark is often snipped off a dog's for elegat an early age, is actually evidence of a pregent thumb. Further believe that men have systematically bredthe thumb out of certainlines of dog through an elaborate process called "selective breeding," simply in other to prevent dogs from evolving into dextons, and therefore "dangerous," mammals.

I also believe that mantont inued domestication (if you care to use t silly euphemism) of dogs is motivated by fear: fear that dogs, left to eron their own, would, in fact, develop thumbs and smaller tongues, and therefore would be superior to men, who are slow and cumbersome, standing erect as they do. This is why dogs must live under the constar supervision of people, and are immediately put to death when found livi on their own.

From what Denny has told me about the government and its inner workings, it is my belief that this despicable plan was hat ched in a backroom of none other than the White House, probably by an evil adviser t president of questionable moral and intellectual fortitude, and probabthe correct assessment—unfortunated from a position of paranoia rather than of spiritual insight—tahlatdogs are progressively inclined regarding social issues.

Case-in-Point #2: The Werewolf

The full moon rises. The fog clings to the lowest branches of the spructrees. The man steps out of the darkest corner of the forest and finds htransformed into...

A monkey?

I think not.

Her name was Eve, and at first I resented how she changed our lives. I resented the attention Denny paid to her small hands, her plump, roun but tocks, her modest hips. The way he gazed into her soft green eyes, w peered out from under styl ish strands of straight blondidal renvy her engaging smile that eclipsed anything about her that might have been considered less than special? Perhaps I did. For she was a person, unlime. She was well groomed. Unlike me. She was everything I wash'went for extended periods without a hair cut or a bath, for instance; she batheevery day and had a special person do nothing else but color her hair to Denny's liking. My nails grew toolong and scratched the wood floor; s frequently attended to her nails with sticks and clippers and polishes make sure they were the proper shape and size.

Her at t ent ion to every detail of her appearance was reflected in her personal it y as well: she was an incredible moizer, fast idious in nature, constantly making lists and jotting down notes of things to be done or gotten or assembled, frequently creating what she called "Honey-Do" for Denny and me, so that our weekends were filled with trips to the H Depot or waiting in line at the Disposal and Recyclingus fer Station in Georget own. I didnt'like painting rooms and fixing door knobs and washins creens. But Denny liked it, apparenther cause the more she gave him to

do, the more quickly he completed his tasks so he could collect his revenulation which usually included a lot of nuzzling and stroking.

Soon after she moved into our apart ment, they were married in a sm wedding ceremony, which I attended along with a group of their closest friends and Eve3 immediate familyDenny didn't have any brothers or sisters to invite, and he explained his parents' absence simply by saying they didn't travel well.

Eve's parents made it clear to all involved that the house in which wedding took place, a charming little beach cottage on Whidbey I slancowned by close friends of theirs who were not in attendance. I was all to participate only under strict rules: I was not to roam freely on the or swim in the bayas I might track sand onto the expensive mahogany floors. And I was forced to urinate and defecate in a very specific locat next to the recycling containers.

Upon our return from Whidbey not iced that Exmoved through our apart ment with a greater sense of authorship, and was much bolder in lactions to move or replace things: towels, linens, and even furniture. Shad entered our lives and changed everything around. And yet, while I unhappy with her intrusion, there was something about her that preven me from mustering any real anger believe that thing was her swollen belly

There was something about thefort it took for her tolie down on he side to rest, having removed her shirt and underments, the way her breasts fell just so across her chest as she lay on the bed. It reminded my own mother at meal time when she sighed and shrugged herself totl ground, lifting her leg to expose her nipples to the search the devices I use to feed you. Now eat! And while I greatly resented the attention Evlavished on her unborn babyin retrospect, I realize I had never given her eason tolavish that same attention on me. Perhaps that is my regret: loved how she was when she was pregnant, and yet I knew I could neve the source of her affection in that way because I could never be her child

She devot ed her sel f t o t he baby before it was even bor n. She t oucher regul ar l y t hrough her t ight l y stret ched skin. She sang to it and dancer

it to music she pl ayed on the stereo. She learned to make it move arour drinking or ange juice, which she did frequent, expl aining to me that the heal th magazines demanded she drink the juice for the folic acid, but she and I both knew she was doing it for the liek. She once asked if I wanted to know what it felt like, and I did, so she held my face against her belly she had drunk the acid, and I felt it move. An elbbw hink, pushing out per versel, hike something reaching out from the grave. It was hard for to imagine exactly what was going on behind the curtain, inside Eve' magic sack where the little rabbit was being assembled. But I knew th what was inside of her was separate from ham dhad a will of its own and moved when it wanted to—or when prodded by the acid—and was beyonder control.

I admire the female sex. The life makers. It must be amazing to har body that can carry an entire creature inside. (I mean, other than a tapeworm, which I 've had. That doesnoount as another life, realThat's a parasite and should never have been there in the first place.) The life Eve had inside her was something she had made. She and Denny had made it togethed wished, at the time, that the baby would look like me.

I remember the day the baby arrived. I had just reached adult hood-years by calendar count. Denny was in Daytona, Florida, for the drive c career. He had spent the entire year soliciting sponsors, begging, pleadi hustling, until he got lucky and found the right person in the right hot lobby to say "You've got balls, son. Call me tomor." Thus, he found his long-sought sponsor dollars and was able to buy a seat in a Porsche 95 Cup Car for the Rolex 24 Hours of Daytona.

Endurance racing is not for the meek. Four drivers each spending six hours behind the wheel of a loud, power ful, chall enging, and expensive I car is an exercise in coordination and determination. The 24 Hours of Dayt ona, which is broadcast on television, is as unpredictable as it is exciting. That Denny was presented with a chance to drive it in the same year that his daughter would be born was one of those coincidences that turn on interpretation: Eve was dismayed by the unfortunate timing of events; Denny celebrated the bounty of opportunity and the feeling that had everything he could possibly ask for

Still, the timing wasfor the day of the race, even though it was more than a week before schedule, Eve felt the contractions and called midwives, who invaded our home and quickly took chare. Later that evening, as Denny was, no doubt, driving the circuit in Daytona and winning the race, Eve stood bent over the bed with two round ladies whell ped her by holding her arms, and with a monstrous bellow that seem to last an housquirted out a little bloody blob of human tissue that wriggled spastically and then cried out. The ladies helped Eve into her and rested the tiny purple thing on her torso until the backyching mouth found Eves nipple and began to suck.

"Coul d I have a minut e al one—?" Eve st art ed.

"Of course," one of the ladies said, moving to the door

"Come wit h us, puppy" t he ot her l ady said t o me on her way out.

"No—" Eve st opped t hem. "He can st ay

I could stay? Despite myself, I felt proud to be included sintence' circle. The two ladies bustled too take care of what ever they needed to take care of, and I watched in fascination as Eve suckled her new babe. After a few minutes, my attention drifted from the babyst meal to Exeface, and I saw that she was crying and I wondered.why

She let her free hand dangle to the bedside, her fingers near my muz I hesit at ed. I dithwant to presume she was beckoning me. But then her fingers wiggled and her eyes caught mine, and I knew she was calling m bumped her hand with my nose. She lift ed her fingers to the crown of m head and scrat ched, still crying, her baby still nursing.

"I know I told him to go," she said to me. "I know that I insisted I know" Tears ran down her cheeks. "Butso wish he were here!"

I had no idea what to do, but I knew not to move. She needed me the

"Wil l you promise to al ways protect her?" she asked.

She was n't as king me. She was as king Dennyand I was mer el y Denny's sur rogat e. Still, I felt the obligation. I under stood that, as could never be as interactive with humanity as I truly deseted. Yeal ize at that moment, I could be something else. I could provide something need to the people around me. I could comfort Eve when Denny was aw I could protect Esubaby. And while I would always crave more, in a sense, I had found a place to begin.

The next day Denny came home from Dayt ona, Florida, unhapplylis mood immediately changed when he held his little girl, whom they nam Zoë, not after me, but after Esver and mother

"Do you see my lit t le angel, Enz?" he asked me.

Did I see her? I pract ical biyrthedher!

Denny skat ed car efully through the kit chen after hereturned, sens that the ice was very thin. Exparents, Maxwell and Ish, had been in the house since Zoë was born, taking care of their daughter and their ne baby granddaughter began calling them the Isb because they looked very much alike with the same shade of artificially coloredandr because they always wore matching out fits: khaki pants or polyesters partnered with sweaters or poloshirts. When one of them wore sunglathe other did, too. The same with Bermuda shorts and tall socks pulle their knees. And because they both smelled of chemicals: plastics and petroleum-based hair products.

From the moment they arrived, theirs had been admonishing Eve for having her baby at home. They told her she was endangering her baby wel fare and that in these modern times, it was irresponsible to give bit anywhere but in the most prestigious of all hospitals with the most expensive of all doctors. Evetried to explain to them that statistics exactly the opposite was true for a healthy monther hat any signs of distress would have been recognized early by her experienced team of licensed midwives but they refused to yield. Fortunately for Eve, Denrarrival home meant the focus on his.

"That's a lot of bad luck," Maxwell said to Denny as they stood in t kit chen. Maxwell was gloating; I could hear it in his voice.

"Do you get any of your money back?"Trish asked.

Denny was distraught, and I was ns'ure why until Mike came over lat that night and he and Denny opened their beers toget herturned out that Denny was going to take the third stint in the The car had been running well, everything going great. They were second in class and Denny wouleasily assume the lead as the sunlight faded and the night driving begar Until the driver who had the second stint feduthe car into the wall on turn 6.

He st ufed it when a Dayt ona Prot ot ype—a much fast er car—was overtaking. First rule of racing: Never move aside to let someone pass make *hi m*pass *you*. But the driver on Denny't eam moved over and he hit the marbles, which is what they call the bits of rubber that **shed of** es and that accumul at e on the track next to the established racing line. He marbles and the rear end snapped around; he plowed into the wall a pretty close to top speed, and the car shattered into a million little p

The driver was unhurt, but the race was over for the team. And Den who had spent a year working for his moment to shine, found himself standing in the infield wearing thency race suit they had given him for the race with the sponsor patches all over it and his own special helms he had fitted with all sorts of radio gear and vent adaptors and the specar bon fiber HANS device for protection, watching the opportunity of hlifetime get dragged of he track by the wreckert rapped ont o a flat bed, and driven off to sal vage without his having sat in it for a single racing

"And you don't get any of your money back," Mike said.

"I don't care about any of that," Denny said. "I should have been her

"She came early You can't know what's going to happen before it happens."

"Yes, I can," Denny said. "I f I 'm any good, I can."

"Anyway," Mike said, lift ing his beer bot tle, "to Zoë."

"To Zoë," Denny echoed.

To Zoë, I said to mysel Whom I will alwaysquect.

When it was just Denny and me, he used to make up to ten thousand dol a month in his spare time by calling people on the telephone, like the commercial said. But after Eve became pregnant, Denny took his job behind the counter at the fancy auto shop that serviced only expensive German cars. Denny liked his real job, but it at eup all of his free time, he and I didn't get to spend our days together anymore.

Somet imes on weekends, Denny t aught at a high-per for mance driver education program run by one of the many car clubs in the area—B,MW Porsche, Al fa Romeo—and he often took me to the track with him, whice enjoyed very much. He didn't really like teaching at these events becaus he didn't get to drive; he just had to sit in the passengemae attell other people how to drive. And it hardly paid for the gas it cost him to get do to the track, he said. He fant asized about moving somewhere—to Sonon or Phoenix or Connecticut or Laegas, or even Europe—and catching on with one of the big schools so he could drive more, but Eve said she tlid think she could ever leave Seattle.

Eve worked for some big retail clothing company because it provide us with money and health insurance, and also because she could buy clo for the family at the employee discount. She went back to work a few months after Zoë was born, even though she really wanted to stay hom with her baby Denny offered to give up his own job to care for Zoë, but

Eve said that was n'practical; instead, she dropped Zo the the day-care center every morning and picked her up every night on her way home fro work.

With Denny and Eve working and Zoë offat day care, I was left to m own devices. For most of the dreary days I was alone in the apart ment wandering from room to room, from nap spot to nap spot, sometimes spending my hours doing not hing more than staring out the window and timing the Metro buses that drove by on the street outside to see if I decipher their schedul e. I hadn'eal ized how much I enjoyed having ever yone bust ling around the house for those first few months of **Zifë**. I had felt so much a part of something. I was an integral figure in Zoë ent er t ainment : somet imes aft er a feeding, when she was awake and al er and strapped safely into her bouncy seat, Eve Deenny would play Monkey in the Middle, throwing a ball of socks back and forth across t living room; I got to be the monkeyl eapt after the socks and then s cr ambled back to catch them, and then danced like a fbegged clown to cat ch t hem again. And when, against all odds, I reached the sock ball a bat t ed it int o t he air wit h my snout, Zoë would squeal and laugh; she w shake her legs with such force, the bouncy chair would scoot along the floor And Eve, Denny, and I would collapse in a pile of laught er

But then ever yone moved on and left me behind.

I wall owed in the emptiness of mylonely days. I would stare out window and try to picture Zoë and me playing Enno-Fetch, a game I had invented but shelater named, in which Denny or Eve would help her rosock ball or fling one of her toys across the room, and I would push it to her with my nose, and she would laugh and I would wag my tail, and then we would do it again. Until one day when a fortunate accident happened that changed mylife. Denny turned on the TV in the morning to check the weather report, and he fortunate accident

Let me tell you this: The Wher Channel is not about weather; it is about the world I t is about how weatherfeedts us all, our entire global economy, health, happiness, spirit. The channel delves with great detail weather phenomena of all diffrent kinds—hurricanes, cyclones, tornado monsoons, hail, rain, lightning storms—and they especially delight in

confluence of multiple phenomena. Absolut the sycinating. So much so that when Denny returned from work that evening, I was still glued to the television.

"What are you wat ching?" he asked when he came in, asked it as if I were Eve or Zoë, as if it couldnhave been more natural to see methere address melike that. But Eve was in the kit chen cooking dinner and Zoë was with her; it was just me. I looked at him and then back the buck the was reviewing the days major event: flooding due to heavy rainstorms of the East Coast.

"The Weat her Channel?" he scood, snat ching up the remote and changing the channel. "Here."

He changed it to Speed Channel.

I had wat ched plent y of TV as I grew up, but only when a person w already wat ching: Denny and I enjoyed racing and the movie channels; E and I wat ched music videos and Hollywood gossip; Zoë and I wat ched childrens shows. (I tried to teach myself to read by studying Sesame S but it didn't work. I achieved a degree of liter, and I can still tell the difference bet ween "pull" and "push" on a doobut after I figured out the shapes of the letters, I coul ghasp which sounds each letter made and why.) But, suddenly, the idea of wat ching television myselfentered my life! If I had been a cart oon, the light bulb over my head would have ill uminated. I barked excitedly when I saw cars racing on the screen. I aughed.

"Bet t err ight?"

Yes! Better! I stretched deejplygously doing my best downward-facing dog and wagging my tail—both gestures of happiness and approvated And Denny got it.

"I didn't know you were a tel evision dog," he said. "I can leave it on you during the dayif you want."

I want! I want!

"But you have to limit your self," he said. "I tdown int to catch you wat ching TV all day long. I'm count ing on you to be responsible."

I am responsi bl e!

While I had learned a great deal up until that point in my life—I three years old already—once Denny began leaving the TV on for me, meducation really tookfofWith the tedium gone, time started moving quickly again. The weekends, when we were all toget, becemed short and filled with activitand while Sunday nights were bittersweet, I took greenfort in knowing I had a week of television ahead.

I was so immersed in my education, I suppose I lost count of the v so I was surprised by the arrival of **Zoë**cond birthdaySuddenly I was engul fed by a part y in the apart ment with a bunch of little kids she had in the park and at her day-care cent ert was loud and crazy and all the chil dren let me play with them and wrestle on the rug, and I let them me up wit h a hat and a sweat jacket and Zoë called me her big brot **Ther**y got I emon cake al I over the fl,comd I got to be E we helper cleaning it up while Denny opened presents with the kids. I thought it nic**Evh**at seemed so happy cleaning up this mess, when she sometimes complained about cleaning the apart ment when one of us made a mess. She even teas me about my crumb-cl eaning skills and we raced, she with her Dust bus and me wit h my t ongue. Aft er ever yone had l eft and we had al l compl et our cleaning as signments, Denny had a surprise birt hday present for Zo He showed her a phot ograph that she looked at briefly and with little interest. But then he showed the same photograph to Eve, and it made cry. And then it made her laugh and she hugged him and looked at the phot o again and cried some mor e. Denny picked up t he phot ograph and showed it to me, and it was a photo of a house.

"Look at this, Enzo," he said. This is your new yard. Aren'you excited?"

I guess I was excited. Act uall was kind of confused. I didn' under st and the implications. And then ever yone started shoving things boxes and scrambling around, and the next thing I knew bed was somewhere else entirely

The house was nice. It was a stylish little Craft sman like I'd see *This Old House* with two bedrooms and only one bathroom but with ple of living space, sit uated very close to its neighbors on a hill side in the Central District. Many electrical wires draped from poles along the sidewalk outside, and while our house looked neat and trim, a few doors down stood other houses with unkempt lawns and peeling paint and morroofs.

Eve and Denny were in love with the place. They spent almost the entire first night there rolling around naked in every room except. Zoë' When Denny came home from work, he would first say hellotothe girl then he would take me outside to the yard and throw the ball, which I happily retrieved and then Zoë got big enough that she would run around and squeal while I pretended to chase Mand Eve would admonish her: "Don't run like that; Enzo will bite you." She did that frequently in the early years, doubt me like that. But one time, Denny turned on her quicand said: "Enzo would never hurt her—ever!" And he was right. I knew was different from other dogs. I had a certain will power that was stroenough to overcome my more primal instincts. What Eve said was not of line, as most dogs cannot help themselves; they see an animal runnin and they track it and they go after it. But that sort of thing daps to me.

Still, Eve didn'know that, and I had no way of explaining it to ker I never played rough with Zoë. I didnwant Eve to start worrying unnecessaril. When Denny was away Eve fed me and sheleaned down to give me my bowl of food and my nose was near her head, I had detected a bad odbike rotting wood, mushroom decay. Wet, soggy decay I t came from her ears and her sinus ever ewas something inside Eves' head that didn't belong.

Given a facil e t ongue, I coul d have war ned t hem. I coul d have all er t t hem to her condition l ong before t hey dis**coo**d it with t heir machines, t heir computers and supervision scopes t hat can see inside t he human h. They may t hink t hose machines are sophisticated, but in fact t hey are clunky and clums, totally reactive, based on a phil osophy of symptom-driven medicine t hat is all ways a step l at e. My nose—yes, my l it t l e blace.

nose that is leathery and cut e—could smell the disease is brace' long before even she knew it was there.

But I hadm'a facile tongue. So all I could do was watch and feel en inside; Eve had assigned me to protect Zoë no matter what, but no one l been assigned to protect Eve. And there was nothing I could do to hell

One summer Saturday after noon, after we had spent the morning at the beach at Al ki swimming and eating fish and chips from Sprodwereturned to the house red and tired from the sun. Eve put Zoë down for a nap; De and I sat in front of the TV to study

He put on a tape of an endur o he had been asked to co-drive in Portla a few weeks earlier t was an exciting race, eight hours long, in which Denny and his two co-drivers took turns behind the wheel in two-hour shifts, ultimately finishing first in class after Denneyenth-hour heroics which included recovering from a near spin to overtake two class competitors.

Wat ching a race entirely from in-car video is a tremendous experient I t creates a wonderful sense of perspecthine is often lost in a television broadcast with its many cameras and cars to fol Sewing a race from the cockpit of a single car gives a true feeling of what Itike to be a driver: the grip on the steering wheel, the dash, the track, and the glimpse through rearview mirror of other cars overtaking or being overtaken, the sense is olation, the focus and determination that are necessary to win.

Denny started the tape at the beginning of his final stint, with the t wet and the sky heavy with dark clouds that threatened more rain. W wat ched several laps in silence. Denny drove smoothly and almost alo

his team had fallen behind after making the crucial decision to pull intpits and switch to rain tires; other racing teams had predicted the rain pass and dry track conditions would return, and so had gained more that two laps on Dennys' team. Yet the rain began again, which gave Denny a tremendous advantage.

Denny quickly and easily passed cars from other classes: under pow Miat as that darted through the turns with their excellent balance; big Vipers with their atrocious handling. Denimyhis quick and muscular Porsche Cup Carslicing through the rain.

"How come you go through the turns so much faster than the other cars?" Eve asked.

I looked up. She stood in the door wayat ching with us.

"Most of them aren'r unning rain tires," Denny said.

Eve took a seat on the sofa next to Denny

"But some of them are."

"Yes, some," he said.

We wat ched. Denny got up behind a yellow Camaro at the end of the back straight, and though it looked as if he could have taken the other cturn 12, he held back. Eve not iced.

"Why didn't you pass him?" she asked.

"I know him. He's got too much power and would just pass me back (the straight. I think I take him in the next series of turns."

Yes. At the next turn-in, Denny was inches from the Cansar ear bumper. He rode tight through the double-apex right-hand turn and their popped out at the exit to take the inside line for the next turn, a quick land he zipped right by

"This part of the track is really slick in the rain," he said. "He has t back way off. By the time he gets his grip back, I 'm out of his reach."

On the back straight again, the headlights illuminating the turn ma against a sky that was still not completely dark, the Camaro could be in Denny's panoramic racing rearview mirr, of ading into the background.

"Did he have rain tires?" Eve as ked.

"I think so. But his car was set up right."

"Still. Wu're driving like the track is nwet, and everyone else is driving like it is."

Turn 12 and blasting down the straight, we could breake lights of the competition flicker ahead; Denny'next victims.

"That which you manifest is before you," Denny said soft ly

"What?" Eve as ked.

"When I was ninet een," Denny said after a moment, "at my first drischool down at Sears Point, it was raining and they were trying to teach how to drive in the rain. After the instructors were finished explaining their secrets, all the students were totally confeded. Widea what they were talking about. I looked over at the guy next to me—I rememble him, he was from France and he was very fast. Gabriel Flouret. He smi and he said: 'That which you manifest is before you.'"

Eve st uck out her lower lip and squint ed at Denny

"And t hen ever yt hing made sense," she said jokingl y

"That's right," Denny said seriously

On the TV, the rain didn't stop; it kept coming. Dennyteam had made the right choice; other teams were pullingint to the hot pits to change to rain tires.

"Drivers are afraid of the rain," Denny told us. "Rain amplifies your mist akes, and wat er on the track can make your car handle unpredict abl When something unpredict able happens you have to react to it; if you're reacting at speed, you're reacting tool at e. And sosyoul dbe afraid."

"I 'm afr aid just wat ching it," Eve said.

"If I intentionally make the car do something, then precion what it's going to do. In other words, ionly unpredictable if I'm not... possessing...it."

"So you spin the car before the car spins it self?" she asked.

"That 's it! I f I init iat e t he act ion—if I get t he car a little loose—know it 's going to happen before it happens. Then I can react to it befor even t he car knows it 'happening."

"And you can do t hat?"

Dashing past other cars on the TV screen, his rear end suddenly ste out, his car got sideways but his hands were already turning to correct instead of his car snapping around into a full spin, he wasagain, leaving the others behind. Eve sighed in relief, held her hand to her forehead.

"Sometimes," Denny said. "But all drivers spin. It comes from pust he limits. But I'm working on it. Always working on it. And I had a ξ day."

She sat with us another minute, and then she smiled at Denny almorel uct antly and stood up.

"I love you," she said. "I love all of you, even your racing. And I k on some level that you are completely right about all this. I jushindled could ever do it myself."

She went off into the kit chen; Denny and I continued wat ching the ca on the video as they drove around and around the circuit drenched in darkness.

I will never tire of wat ching tapes with Deffeyknows so much, and I have learned so much from him. He said not hing more to me; he continued wat ching his tapes. But my thoughts turned to what he had jut aught me. Such a simple concept, yet so true: that which we manifest i before us; we are the creators of our own dest Bryit through intention o ignorance, our successes and our fail ures have been brought on by none other than ourselves.

I considered how that idea applied to my relationship with Eve. It true that I carried some resentment toward her for her involvement ilives, and I know that she sensed that fact and protected herself by remaining aloof. And even though our relationship had changed greatly since Zoë's arrival, there was still a distance between us.

I left Denny at the TV and wal ked int o the kit chen. Eve was prepar dinner, and she looked at me when I entered.

"Bor ed wit h t he r ace?" she as ked casual l y

I wasn't bored. I could have wat ched the race all that day and all t next. I was manifesting something. I lay down near the refrigien at or favorite spot of mine, and rested.

I could tell she felt self-conscious with me there. Usfullehnyy was in the house, I spent my time by his side; that I had chosen to be with now seemed to confuse herShe didn't understand my intentions. But the she got rolling with dinner she forgot about me.

First she started some handwarfrying, which smelled good. Then she was hed some let tuce and spun it desphes liced apples. She added onions and garlic to a pot and then a can of tomatoes. And the kit chen was rich with the smell of food. The smell of it and the heat of the day made me quite drows yso I must have nodded beint il I felt her hands on me, untifelt her stroking my side, then scratching my behild rolled over on my back to acknowledge her dominance; my reward was more of her comforting scratches.

"Sweet dog," she said to me. "Sweet dog."

She returned to her preparations, pausing only occasionally to rub neck with her bare foot as she passed, which was mill that much, but meant alot to me nonetheless.

I had al ways want ed to love Eve as Denny loved, **bet** I never had because I was afraid. She was my rain. She was my unpredict able eleme She was my fear. But a racer should not be afraid of rain; a racer should embrace the rain. I, alone, could manifest a change in that which was around me. By changing my mood, my energy, I allowed Eve to regard m different l.yAnd while I cannot say that I am a master of my own destin can say that I have experienced a glimpse of mast end I know what I have to work toward.

A coupl e of years aft er we moved int o t he new house, somet hing very fright ening happened.

Denny got a seat for a race at AWkins Glen. It was another enduro, bit was with a well-established team, and he didnave to find all the sponsorship money for his seat. Earlier that spring he had gone to Fra for a Formula Renault testing program. It was an expensive program couldn't afford; he told Mike his parents paid for it as a gift, but I had I doubts. His parents lived very far away in a small town, and they had n visited in all the time I had been there. Not for the wedding, Kive'h, or anything. No matte Wherever the funding came from, Denny had attende this program, and he had kicked ass because it was in France in the sprin when it rains. When he told Eve about it, he said that one of the scouts attend these things approached him in the day as you can in the wet?" And Dennylool him straight in the eyes and replied, simpfify y me."

That which you manifest is before you.

The scout ofered Denny atryout, and Denny went away for two weel Testing and tuning and practicing. It was a big deal. He did so well, the offered him a seat in the endurorace Watkins Glen.

When he first left for Newolk, we all grinned at each other because we couldn't wait to watch the race on Speed Channel.

"I ts's o excit ing." E ve woul d giggl e. "Daddy'a professional race car driver!"

And Zoë, whom I love very much and would not hesit at e to sacrific my own life to protect, would cheer and hop into her littlerace carth in the living room and drive around in circles until we were all dizzy at then throw her hands into the air and proclaim, "I am the champion!"

I got so caught up in the excitement, I was doing idiotic dog things digging up the lawn. Balling myself up and then stretching out long an thin on the floor with my legs straight and my back arched and letting scratch my bell And chasing things. I chased!

It was the best of times. Really

And then it was the worst of times.

Race day came, and E ve woke up with a darkness upon her pain so insuffer ables he stood in the kit chen in tearly hours, before Zoë was awake, and vomited with great intensity into the sink. She vomited as if were turning herself inside out.

"I don't know whats' wrong with me, Enzo," she said. And she rarely spoke to me candidly like that. Like how Denny talks to me, as if I 'm l true friend, his soul mate. The last time she had talked to me like that when Zoë was born.

But this time she did talk to me like I was her soul mate. She as ke "What's wrong with me?"

She knew I couldnt' answer Her question was totally rhetorical. \$\subset{S}h\$ what I found so frustrating about it: I had an answer

I knew what was wrong, but I had no way to tel, booder pushed at her thigh with my muzzle. I nosed in and buried my face between her legs. I

I wait ed t her e, afr aid.

"I feel like someone'crushing my skull," she said.

I coul dn'respond. I had no words. There was not hing I coul d do.

"Someone's crushing my skull," she repeat ed.

And quickly she gat hered some things while I wat ched. She shoved Zoë's clot hes in a bag and some of her own and toot hbrushes. All so fas And she roused Zoë and st the her little kid-feet into her little-kid sne and—bang—the door slammed shut and sni ck, sni ck—the deadbolt was thrown and they were gone.

And I was n' gone. I was there. I was still there.

I deal ly driver is a master of all that is around him, Denny says. I, deal driver controls the car so completely that he corrects a spin before it happens, he anticipates all possibilities. But wetdown in an ideal world I nour world, surprises sometimes happen, mist akes happen, incident so ther drivers happen, and a driver must react.

When a driver react s, Denny says, stimport ant to remember that a c is only as good as it s tires. If the tires lose traction, not hing else ma Horsepowert or que, braking. All is moot when a skid is initiated. Until speed is scrubbed by good, old-fashioned friction and the tires regain traction, the driver is at the mercy of moment um. And moment um is a powerful force of nature.

It is important for the driver to understand thind deverride his natural inclinations. When the rear of a car "steps out," the driver may and lift his foot of the accelerator fine does, he will throw the weight of the car toward the front wheels, the rear end will snap around, and the will spin.

A good driver will try to catch the spin by turning wheels in the direction the car is moving; he may succeed. However a critical point, the skid has completed its mission, which was to scrub speed from a cargoing too fast. Suddenly the tires find grip, and the driver has traction

unfort unat el y for him, with his front wheels turned sharply in the wro direction. This induces a counterspin, as there is no bal ance to the car what soever Thus, the spin in one direction, when over corrected, becomes spin in the other direction, and the secondary spin is much faster and managerous.

If, however at the very first moment his tires began to break free, c driver had been experienced enough to resist his instinctive reaction to he might have been able to apply his knowledge of vehicle behavior and, instead, increase the pressure on the acceleration at the same time ease out on the steering wheel ever so slighthey increase in acceleration would have pushed his rear tires onto the track and settled. Recarring the steering would have less ened the lateral g-forces at work. The spi would therefore have been corrected, but our driver would then have to with the secondary problem his correction has creative there as ing the radius of the turn, he has put himself at risk of runnifing to the turn.

Al as! Our driver is not where he had hoped to **Wet** he is still in control of his calle is still able to act in a positive manlerstill can create an ending to his story in which he completes the race without incident. And, perhaps, if his manifesting is good, he will win.

When I was locked in the house suddenly and firmly did not panic. I did not overcorrect or freeze. I quickly and carefully took stock of the sit and understood these things: Eve was ill, and the illness was possibly affecting her judgment, and she likely would not return for me; Denny would be home on the third day fter two nights.

I am a dog, and I know how to fast slatpart of the genetic backgroun for which I have such contempt. When God gave men big brains, he took away the pads on their feet and made them susceptible to sal monella.' he denied dogs the use of thumbs, he gave them the ability to survive without food for extended periods. While a thumbne thumb!—would have been very helpful at that time, alihowne to turn a stupid doorknob and escape, the second best tool, and the one at my disposal, was my ab to go without nour ishment.

For three days I took care to ration the toil etI wwwaedered around the house sniffing at the crack beneath the pantry door and fant asizing al a big bowl of my kibble, scooping up the occasional errant dust-covered Cheerio Zoë had dropped in a corner somewhere. And I urinated and defecated on the mat by the back doomext to the laundry machines. I did not panic.

During the second night, approximately forty hours into my solit us think I began to hall ucinate. Licking at the legs of Zhogh chair where I had discovered some remnants of yogurt spilled long ago, I inadverten sparked my stomack digestive juices to life with an unpleasant groan, a I heard a sound coming from her bedroom. When I investigated, I saw something terrible and fright ening. One of her feeduanimal toys was moving about on its own.

It was the zebra. The steat zebrathat had been sent to her by her paternal grandparents, who may have been stedfanimals themselves for all that we saw them in Seattle. I never cared for that zebra, as it was something of my rival for Zoæ'affection. Frankl, y was surprised to see in the house, since it was one of Zoæ'favorites and she carted it around a length and even slept with it, wearing little grooves in its coat just be animal s velveteen head. I found it hard to believe Eve had y abbed it when shethrew together their bag, but I guess she was so freaked out such pain that she overlooked the zebra.

The now-living zebra said not hing to me at all, but when it saw me i began a dance, a twisting, jerky ballet, which culminated with the zebra repeatedly thrusting its gelded groin into the face of an innocent Barbi doll. That made me quite angrand I growled at the molester zebra, but simply smiled and continued its assault, this time picking onfædsfruóg, which it mounted from behind and rode bareback, its hoof in the air like bronco rideryelling out, "We-haw! Yee-haw!"

I stalked the bast ard as it abused and humiliated each of Zoÿs with great malice. Final, Ily could take no more and I moved in, teeth bared for attack, to end the brutal burlesque once and for all. But before I coulthe demented zebra in my fangs, it stopped dancing and stood on its hinclegs before me. Then it reached down with its forelegs and tore at the sthat ran down its belly sown seam! It ripped the seam open until it wable to reach in and tear out its own singf I t continued dismantling its seam by seam, handful by handful, until it expelled what ever desmon' blood had brought it to life and was nothing more than a pile of fabric a stufing that undulated on the flobeating like a heart ripped from a ches slowlyslower and then nothing.

Traumat ized, I left Zoë'oom, hoping that what I had seen was in my mind, a vision driven by the lack of glucose my blood, but knowing, somehow, that it was train vision; it was true. Something terrible had happened.

The following afternoon, Denny returned. I heard the taxi pull up, wat ched him unload his bags and walk them up to the back ddordidn't want to seem too excited to see him, and yet at the same time I was concerned about what I had done to the door mat, so I gave a couple of small barks to alert himrough the window I could see the look of surprise on his face. He took out his keys and opened the doord I tried t block him, but he came in too quickly and the mat made a squishy sound. He looked down and gingerly hopped into the room.

"What the hell? What are you doing here?"

He gl anced around the kit chen. Not hing was out of place, not hing was amiss, except me.

"Eve?" he cal l ed out.

But Eve wasn't here. I didnknow where she was, but she wasnwith me.

"Ar e t hey home?" he as ked me.

I didn't answer He picked up t he phone and dial ed.

"Ar e Eve and Zoë still at your house?" he asked wit hout saying hel "Can I speak to Eve?"

Aft er a moment, he said, "Enzo is here."

He said, "I'm trying to wrap my head around it mysebfi. Neft him here?"

He said, "This is insane. How could you not remember that your dog in the house?"

He said, "He's been her e t he whol e t ime?"

He said ver y angril, "Shit!"

And then he hung up the phone and shout ed in frustration, a big long shout that was very loud. He looked at me after that and said, δa am pissed of."

He wal ked t hr ough t he house quickly didn't follow him; I wait ed by t he back door A minut e l at er he r et ur ned.

He got a gar bage bag out of the pantry and scooped the sopping mat into it, tied it closed, and put it on the back porch. He mopped up the ar near the door

"You must be starving."

He filled my wat er bowl and gave me some kibble, which I at e too quickly and didn't enjoy but at least it filled the empty space in my stomach. In silence, fuming, he wat ched me eat. And very soon, Eve and Zoë arrived on the back porch.

Denny t hr ew open t he door

"Unbel ievabl e," he said bit t er l'You ar e unbel ievabl e."

"I was sick," Eve said, st epping int o t he house wit h Zoë hiding behir her. "I was nt' t hinking."

"He coul d have died."

"He didn't die."

"He *coul d*have died," Denny said. "I 've never hear d of anyt hing so st upid. Car el es so Tal l y unawar e."

"I was sick!" Eve snapped at him. "I was thinking!"

"You don't think, people die. Dogs die."

"I can't do t his anymore," she cried, standing there shaking like a th tree on a windy day Zoë scurried around her and disappeared into the house. "You al ways go away and I have to take care of Zoë and Enzo all myself, and I can'do it! Ist' oo much! I can barely take care of myself!

"You shoul d have call ed Mike or taken him to a kennelsomething Don't try to kill him."

"I didn't ry to kill him," she whis per ed.

I hear d weeping and l ooked ove Zoë st ood in the door to the hall way crying. Eve pushed past Denny and went to Zoë, kneel ing before her

"Oh, baby, we're sorry we're fight ing. eWl stop. Please doncry"

"My animal s," Zoë whimper ed.

"What happened to your animal s?"

Eve l ed Zoë by t he hand down t he hall. Denny followed t hem. I stawhere I was. I was ngoing near that room where the dancing sex-freak zebra had been. I didn' want to see it.

Suddenly I heard thundering footsteps. I cowered by the back door Denny hurtled through the kitchen toward me. He was epochip and angry and his eyes locked on me and his jaw clenched tight.

"You st upid dog," he growl ed, and he grabbed the back of my neck, taking a huge fist ful of my fur and jerking. I went limp, afraid. He'd nev treat ed me like this beforthe dragged me through the kit chen and down the hall, into Zoëroom where she sat, st unned, on the floor in the mide of a huge mess. Her dolls, her animals, all torn to shreds, eviscer at ed complete disast. Fot al carnage. I could only assume that the evil demizebra had reassembled itself and destroyed the other animals after I

I shoul d have el iminat ed t he zebr a when I had my chance. I shoul d hav eat en it, even if it had kil l ed me.

Denny was so angry that his anger filled up the entire room, the enthouse. Nothing was as lge as Denny's anger. He reared up and roared, and with his great hand, he struck me on the side of the head. I toppled ove with a yelp, hunkering as close to the ground as possible. "Bad dog!" he bellowed and he raised his hand to hit me again.

"Denny, no!" E ve cried. She rushed to me and covered me with her ov body. She protected me.

Denny st opped. He wouldnt' hit herNo matter what. Just as he wouldn't hit me. Hehadn't hit me, I knoweven though I could feel the pa of the blowHe had hit the demon, the evil zebra, the dark creature that came into the house and possessed the stedfanimal. Denny believed the evil demon was in me, but it wastn't saw it. The demon had possessed the zebra and left me at the bloody scene with no voice to defend myself—I had been framed.

"We'll get new animals, babyEve said to Zoë. "We'll go to the store tomorrow"

As gently as I could, I slunk toward Zoë, the saginit tohet he floor surrounded by the rubble of her fant asy world, her chin tucked into her chest, tears on her cheeks. I felt her pain because I knew her fant asy vint imat el, yas she allowed me to see the truth of it, and often included rit. Through our role-playing—silly games with significant telltales—what she thought about who she really was, her place in life. How she worshipped her father and always hoped to please her mother she trusted me but was afraid when I made faces at her that were too exprand defied what she'd learned from the adult-driveor Wd Order that denies animals the process of thought. I crawled to her on my elbows placed my nose next to her thigh, tanned from the summer sun. And I r my eyebrows slightly as if to ask if she could evegiver me for not protecting her animals.

She wait ed a long time to give me her answerut she final ly gave it. She placed her hand on my head and let it rest there. She didner at ch me. It would be a while before she allowed herself to do that. But she did me, which meant she fogave me for what had happened, though the wound was still too raw and the pain was still too great for heret.

Lat er aft er ever yone had eat en and Zoë was put to bed in her room thad been cleaned of the car nage, I found Denny sitting on the porch stel with a drink of hardliquowhich I thought was strange because he hardlever drank hardliquowhad approached cautious, land he not iced.

"I ts' okay, boy," he said. He pat ted the step next to him and I went thim. I sniffed his wrist and took a tent at ivelick. He smiled and rubbed in neck.

"I'm really sor't bre said. "I lost my mind."

The pat ch of l awn behind our house was not big, but it was nice in th evening. It was rimmed by a dirt strip covered with sweet-smelling ce chips where they planted flowers in the spring, and they had a bush in t corner that made flowers that attracted the bees and made me nervous whenever Zoë played near it, but she never got stung.

Denny finished his drink with a long swallow and shivered involunt aril. He produced a bottle from nowhere—I was surprised I th not iced it —and poured himself anothere stood up and took a couple of steps and stretched to the sky

"We got first place, Enzo. Not 'in classe't Wok first place over all. You know what that means?"

My heart jumped. I knew what it meant. I t meant that he was the champion. I t meant he was the best!

"It means a seat in a touring car next season, st halta't it means,"
Denny said to me. "I got an feer from a real, live racing team. Do you know what an offer is?"

I loved it when he talked to melike that. Dragging out the drama. Ratcheting up the anticipation. I 've always found great pleasure in the narrative tease. But then, I 'm a dramatist. For me, a good story is all setting up expect at ions and delivering on them in an exciting and surpriway.

"Get t ing an offer means I can drive if I come up with my share of sponsorship money for the season—which is reasonable and all most at tainable—and if I 'm willing to spend the better part of six months from Eve and Zoë and you. Am I willing to do that?"

I didn't say anything because I was torn. I knew I was Debiggest fan and most steadfast supporter in his racing. But I also felt someth what Eve and Zoë must have felt whenever he went away: a hollow pit i my stomach at the idea of his absence. He must have been able to read n mind, because he gul ped at his glass and said, "I donhink so, eit he'r Which was what I was thinking.

"I can't believe she left you like that," he said. "I know she had a vibut still."

Did he real ly believe that, or was he lying to himsel f? Or maybe he believed it because Eve want ed him to believe it. No matHad I been a person, I could have told him the truth abouts Evadition.

"It was a bad virus," he said more to himself than to me. "And she couldn't hink."

And suddenly I was unsure: had I been a person, had I been able to him the truth, I'm not sure he would have wanted to hear it.

He groaned and sat back down and filled his glass again.

"I 'm t aking t hose s **fed** animal s out of your allowance," he said wit l chuckle. He looked at me t hen, t ook my chin wit h his hand.

"I love you, boy he said. "And I promise I 'll never do that again. I matter what. I 'm really sorry

He was bl at her ing, he was drunk. But it made me feel so much love him, too.

"You'r e t ough," he said. "You can do t hr ee days l ike t hat because you'r e one t ough dog."

- I felt proud.
- "I know you'd never do anyt hing del iber at el y t o hur t Zoë," he said.
- I laid my head on his leg and looked up at him.

"Somet imes I think you act ually under stand me," he said. I'lke' there's a person inside there. Like you know ever ything."

I do I said to mysel*I*f.*do*.

Eve's condition was elusive and unpredictable. One day she would sufficient headache of crushing magnitude. Another daylebil it at ing nausea. At hird would open with dizziness and end with a dark and angry mood. And thes days were never linked together consecutive of ween them would be days or even weeks of relief, life as usual. And then Denny would get a at work, and he would run to Exeassistance, drive her home from her jo impose on a friend to follow in her cannot spend the rest of the day wat ching helplessly

The intense and arbitrary nature of Esvæffl ict ion was far beyond Denny's grasp. The wail ings, the dramatic screaming fits, the falling of floor in fits of anguish. These are things that only dogs and women underst and because we tap into the pain direct legyconnect to pain direct left om its source, and so it is at once brill iant and brutal and itherwhitehot metal spraying out of a fire hose, we can appreciate the aest het ic we taking the worst of it straight in the face. Men, on the other hand, are a filters and deflectors and timed release. For menhike at he tesefoot: spray the special spray on it, they, sand it goes away They have no idea that the manifest at ion of their light ion—the fungus bet ween their hair yet oes—is merely a symptom, an indication of a systemic problem. A can bloom in their bowels, for instance, or some other upset to their systems.

express itself on a deeper level at some other time. Go see a **Abe** somid to her Get some medication. And she howled to the moon in replay never understood, as I did, what she meant when she said that medicati would only mask the pain, not make it go awaynd what is the point of that. He never understood when she said that if she went to a **doctor** doctor would only invent a disease that would explain why he could here. And there was so much time bet ween episodes. There was so much hope.

Denny was frustrated by his impotence, and in that regard, I could understand his point of view ts' frustrating for meto be unable to speak To feel that I have so much to say many ways I can help, but I 'm lock in a soundproof box, a game show is ol at ion booth from which I can see and I can hear what 'going on, but they never turn on my microphone and they never let me out. It might drive a person mad. It certainly has d many a dog mad. The good dog that would never hurt a soul but is found one day having eaten the face of his master as she slept deeply under the influence of sleeping pills? There was nothing wrong with that dog except that his mind finally snapped. As awful as it sounds, it happensonitt'he TV news regularly

Myself, I have found ways around the madness. I work at my human gait, for instance. I practice chewing my food slowly like people do. I the television for clues on behavior and to learn how to react in certain situations. In my next life, when I am born again as a person, I will practically be an adult the moment I am plucked from the womb, with the preparation I have done. It will be all I can do to wait for my new human body to mature to adult hood so I may excel at all the athletic intellectual pursuits I hope to enjoy

Denny avoided the madness of his personal sound-booth hell by driv through it. There was not hing he could do to make Exwerstress go away and once he realized that, he made a commit ment to do everything else better

Oft enthings happentorace cars in the heat of the race. A square-toothed gear in a transmission may break, suddenly leaving the driver without all of his gears. Or perhaps a clutch fails. Brakes go soft from

over heat ing. Suspensions break. When faced with one of these problems the poor driver crashes. The average driver gives up. The great drivers through the problem. They figure out a way to continue racing. Like in t Luxembourg Grand Prix in 1989, when the I rish racer Kevin Finne for kevin Finne for twenty laps of the race victoriously and ter revealed that he had driven the fir twenty laps of the race with only two gears de Tablet to possess a machine in such a way is the ultimate show of determination and awareness. It makes one realize that the physicality of our world is a boundary to us only if our will is weak; a true champion can accomplish things that a normal person would think impossible.

Denny cut back his hours at work so he could take Zoë to her presch. In the evenings after dingenere ead to her and helped her learn her numb and letters. He took over all the grocery shopping and cooking. He too over the cleaning of the house. And he did it all excellently and without complaint. He want ed to relieve Eve of any burden, any job that could cause stress. What he could ndo, though, with all of the extra he was doing, was continue to engage her in the same playful and physically affect ionate way I had grown used to seeing. It was impossible for him do everything; clearly he had decided that the care of her gamism would receive the topmost prior. Which I believe was the correct thing for hi to do under the circumstances. Because he had me.

I see green as gray see red as black. Does that make me a bad pot ential person? I f you taught me to read and provided for me the san computer system as someone has provided for Stephen Hawking, I, too would write great books. And yet you dont'each me to read, and you don' give me a computer stick I can push around with my nose to point at the next letter I wish typed. So whose fault is it that I am what I am?

Denny did not stop loving Eve, he mer el y del egat ed his love-giving me. I became the provider of love and comfort by pr. When she ail ed and he took charge of Zoë and whis ked her out of the house to see one of the many wonder ful animat ed films they make for children so that she might not hear the cries of agony from her mot her tayed behind. He trust ed me. He would tell me, as he and Zoë packed their bottles of waand their special sandwich cookies without hydrogenat ed oils that he

bought for her at the good market, he would, stoot ake care of her for me, Enzo, please."

And I did. I took care of her by curling up at her bedside, so he had collapsed on the floory curling up next to her there. Often, she would hold me close to he hold me tight to her bookynd when she did, she would tell me things about the pain.

I cannot lie still. I cannot be alone with this. I needam sand thrash, because it stays away when I seam. When I'm silent, it finds me tracks me down and pieces me and says, "Now I've got you! Now you belong to me!"

Demon. Greml in. Poltgeist. Ghost. Phant om. Spirit. Shadowhoul. Devil. People are afraid of them so they relegate their existence to stovol umes of books that can be closed and put on the shelf or left behind bed and breakfast; they clench their eyes shut so they will see no evil. trust me when I tell you that the zebra is real. Somewhere, the zebra dancing.

The spring finally ground around to us through an except ionally we wint er, full of gray days and rain and an edgy cold I rarely found rejuvenating. Over the wint, we were at e poorly and became drawn and pale. When her pain came, she often went for days without eating a bite of foc She never exercised, so her thinness had no tone, slack skin over brittl bones; she was wasting away. Denny was concerned, but Eve never heeded his pleas for her to consult a doc. Aomild case of depression, she would say. They'll try to give her pills and she dotes want pills. And one evenin after dinner which was a special one, though I don't emember if it was a birthday or an anniversar. Denny suddenly appeared naked in the bedroon and Eve was naked on the bed.

It seemed so odd to me because they hadmount ed or even played with each other in such a long time. But there they were. He positioned himself over her and she said to him, "The field is fertile."

"You ar en't real lare you?" he asked.

"J ust say it," she replied after a moment, her eyes having dimmed, having been sucked deep into their sockets and swallowed by the ypuf skin, suggesting anything but fertility

"I embrace the fertil," the said. But their exchange seemed weak and unent husiastic. She made noise, but she was pretending, I could tell, because in the middle of it she looked at me and shook her head and wave me off. Respectfull, it withdrew to another room and drift ed into a light sleep. And, if I recall correct logreamed of the crows.

They sit in the trees and on the electric wires and on the roofs and they wat chever yt hing, the sinister little bastards. They cackle with a dark like they're mocking you, cawing constant he know where you are when you're in the house, they know where you are when you're outside; they're always waiting. The smaller cousin of the raven, they are reser and angry bitter at being genetically dwarfed by their brothers. The rait is said, is the next step up the evolutionary ladder from man. The racreated man, after all, according to the legends of the Northwest Coasnatives. (Is interesting to note here that the deity that corresponds wraven in Plains Indian folklore is the coyote, which is a dog. So it seem me we are all smashed together at the top of the spiritual food chain.) the raven created and the crow is the raven cousin, where does the crow fit in?

The crow fits in the gar bage. Wy smart, very sltyhey are best when they apply their evil little genius to uncapping a gar bage can or pecking through some kind of enclosure to get at scrap food. They are scum, creatures of clust they call them a murder when they are in a group. A good word, because when they are toget herou want to kill them.

I never chase a crowThey hop away, t aunt ing, trying to dupe you into chase in which you will become injuredTrying to get you stuck somewher far away, so they can have their way with the garbagesItrue. Sometimes

when I have night mares, I dream of crows. A murder of them. At tacking the total ruthless, or uelly tearing metoshreds. It is the worst.

When we first moved to our house, something happened with the crc and thats why I know they hat e me. It bad to have enemies. Denny all ways picked up my leavings in small green biodegradable bags. Plat it of what people do as a penance for their need to keep dogs under such st supervision. They must extract our excrement from between the grass blades with a plastic bag that has been turned inside out. They must gr with their fingers and handle it. Even though the properties are introduced in the sense of smell the sophistication to discern the subtlety of the layers of scent and the meaning.

Denny collected the small crap-filled bags and thepten in a plastic grocery bag. Occasionally he would dispose of the parkage in a garbage can in the park up the street. I guess he didwant to pollute his own garbage can with bags of my feces. I donknow

The crows, who pride themsel ves on being cousins of the raven and therefore being very smart, love going after a bag of groceries. And the have, on many occasion, gone after a bag on the porch left outside when Denny or Eve brought home more than a few at a time. They can get in a out so fast, maybe find some cookies or something and fly away

On one occasion, when I was young, the crows spotted Eve bringing home the groceries and they crowded near, by ustering in a tree just on t edge of the propert, so many of them. They were silent, not wanting to draw attention to themselves, but I knew they were there. Eve had pathe alleyand she made several trips with bags from the car to the porch then from the porch into the house. The crows watched. And they not ico that Eve had left a bag behind.

Well. They are smart, I have to give them credit, for they dindry'e in right away They wat ched and wait ed until Eve went upstairs and undres and got into the bathtub, as she sometimes did in the afternoon when she had a day off from her work. They wat ched and were surethat the glass

paned kit chen door was closed and locked sot hieves and rapists cottled get in, and so I could n'get out. Then they made their move.

They swooped in, sever all of them, and picked up the bagith their beaks. One of them goaded me by walking up to the glass and trying to me to bark. Normal Jy would have resisted the erjust to spite them, bu knowing what I knew barked a few times, enough to make it convincing They didn't go far They want ed to taunt me with it. They want ed me to watch them enjoy the treats in the bag, so they stopped inside the yard the grass, the whole group of them. They danced around in circles and n faces at me and flapped their wings and called for their friends. They to open the plastic and they dove in with all of their beaks to eat the won food and delicious items that were hidden inside, and they ate. They gult those stupid birds; they ate from the bag and they swallowed with gleethey choked on giant mouthfuls of my shit.

My shit!

Oh, the looks on their faces! The stunned sile indignation! The shaking of heads, and then they flew ben masse to the neighbor up the street with the dribbling fount ain so they could wash their beaks.

They came back, then. Clean and mad. Hundreds of them. Maybe thousands. They stood on the back porch and on the back lawn, so thick with crows it was like a massive, undulating layer of tar and feathers, their beady eyes trained on me, staring at me, as if to compne out, little doggie, and we'll peck your eyeballs out!

I didn't go out. And t hey soon l eft. But when Denny got home from work t hat dayhe l ooked in t he back. Evewas cooking dinner, and Zoë was still little, in a high chairnny l ooked out side and said, "Why is t here so much bird crap on the deck?" I knew iven a Stephen Hawking computer I could have made a good joke of it.

He went out and turned on the hose and washed the deck. And he collected the torn poop bags with puzzlement but no inquincy rees and telephone wires and electrical wires were heavy with those birds, all

t hem wat ching. I didn'go out with him. And when he want edt o gothrov the ball, I pretended I was sick and climbed ont o my bed and slept.

It was a good laugh, wat ching those dumb birds who think they'ressmart with their beaks full of dogshit. But, as with all things, there repercussions: since that time, my night mares have all ways contained an crows.

A mur der of t hem.

The clues were all there, I simply hadnad them correct Dwer the winter, he had played a video racing game obsessively which wasn't like him. He had never gotten into racing games. But that winteeplayed the game every night after Eve went to bed. And he raced on American circuonly St. Peters by grand Laguna Seca. Road Atlanta and Mid-Ohio. I shou have known just from seeing the tracks he was racing. He waspl'aying a video game, he was studying the circuits. He was learning turn-in point and braking points. I'd heard him talk about how accurate the backgrouare on these video games, how drivers have found the games can be quite helpful for getting acquainted with new circuits. But I never thought-

And his diet: no al cohol, no sugamo fried foods. His exercise regimen running several days a week, swimming athe Medgar Evers Pool, lifting weights in the garage of the big guy down the street who started lift in when he was in prison. Denny had been preparing himself. He was lean astrong and ready to do battle in a race Aard I had missed all the signs. But then, I believe I had been duped. Because when he came downstairs with his track bag packed that day in March and his suit case on wheels his special helmet-and-HANS-device bag, Eve and Zoë seemed to know a about his leaving. He had to latem. He hadn't tolame.

The parting was strange. Zoë was both excited and nervous, Eve was somber, and I was utterly confus Where was he going? I raised my

eyebrows, lift ed my ears, and cocked my head; I used every facial gest u my disposal in an attempt to glean information.

"Sebring," he said to me, reading my mind the way he does somet ime:
"I took the seat in the touring didn't I tell you?"

The touring car? But that was something he said he could never do! agreed on that!

I was at once el at ed and devast at ed. A race weekend is at least thr nights awaysomet imes four when the event is on the opposite coast, and there are el even races over an eight-month period. He would be away so much of the time! I was worried about the emotional well-being of the usleft behind.

But I am a racer at heart, and a racer will never let something that already happened affect what is happening ow. The news that he had taker the touring car seat and was flying to Sebring to race on ESPN 2 was extremely good. He was finally doing what he should be doing when he was supposed to do it. He was n'waiting or worrying about everyone else He was looking out for himself. A race car driver must be very selfish. a cold truth: even his family must come second to the race.

I wagged my tail enthusiasticahhothe smil ed at me with a twinkle i his eye. He knew that I under stood ever yt hing he said.

"Be good, now," he chided me pl ayful l.y'Wat ch over t he girls."

He hugged little Zoë and kissed Eve gentbyt as he turned away from her she launched hersel f into his chest and grabbed him tight. She burie hersel f in his shoul demer face red with congested tears.

"Pl ease come back," she said, her words mufed by his mass.

"Of course I will."

"Pl eas e come back," she r epeat ed.

He soot hed her

"I promise I 'll come back in one piece," he said.

She shook her head, which was still pressed against his body

"I don't care how many pieces," she said. "J ust promise you'll come back."

He quickly glanced at me, as if I could clarify what we have really asking. Did she mean come back alive? Or come back and not leave her? (something else entirely? He didriknow

I, howeverknew exactly what she meant. Eve was now or ied about Denny not returning, she was worried about herself. She knew that something was wrong with herhough she didn't know what, and she was afraid it would return in some terrible way when Denny was not with u was concerned as well, the memory of the zebra still in my head. I douexplain this to Dennybut I could resolve to remain steadfast in his abs

"I promise," he said, hopeful.ly

Aft er he had gone, Eve closed her eyes and took a deep breat h. When she opened her eyes again, she looked at me, and I could see that she har es ol ved something for her self as well.

"I insisted he do it," she said to me. "I think it will be good for me will make me strongër

That was the first race of the series, and the race tdiglowell for Denny, though it went fine for Eve, Zoë, and me. What ched it on Tyand Denny qualified in the top third of the field. But shortly into the race, had to pit because of a cut tire; a crew member had trouble mounting the new wheel, and by the time Denny returned to the race, he was a lap down and never recovered. Went y-fourth place.

The second race came only a few weeks after the first, and, again, Ev Zoë, and I managed fine. For Denny he roults of the race were very muct he same as the first: spilled fuel that resulted in a stop-and-go penal costing Denny alap. Thirtieth place.

Denny was extremely frustrated.

"I like the guys," he told us at dinner when he was home for a stret "They're good people, but they're not a good pit crawey're making mistakes, killing our season. If they would just give me a chance to fin I'd finish well."

"Can't you get a new crew?" Eve as ked.

I was in the kit chen, next to the dining room. I never stayed in the dining room when they at e, out of respect. No one likes a dog under the table looking for crumbs when they're eating. So I coulsate't hem, but I could hear them. Denny picking up the wooden sal ad bowl and serving himself more sal ad. Zoë pushing her chicken nuggets around on the plat

"Eat them, hone," Eve said. "Don't play with them."

"I ts' not the quality of the man," Denny tried to explains "the quality of the team."

"How do you fix it?" Eve as ked. "You're spending so much time away it seems like a waste. What the point of racing if you can 'finish? Zoë, you've only had two bit esEat."

The crunching of romaine. Zoë drinking from her sippy cup.

"Pr act ice," Denny said. "Pr act ice, pr act ice, pr act ice."

"When will you pract ice?"

"They want me to go down to I nfineon next week, work with the Ap Porsche people. Work hard with the pit cresso there are no more mistakes. The sponsors are getting frustrated."

Eve fell silent.

"Next week is your week off," she said final l.y

"I won't be gone long. Three or four days. Good sal ad. Did you make the dressing yourself?"

I couldnt'read their body language because I couldnesse them, but there are some things a dog can sensitension. Fear Anxiety These states of being are the result of a chemical release inside the human. Body are totally physiological, in other words. I nvolute opting like to think they have evolved beyond instinct, but in fact, they still have fightigout responses to stimuli. And when their bodies respond, I can smell the chemical release from their pituitary glands. For instance, adrenaline very specific odor, which is not so much smelled but tasted. I know a person can't understand that concept, but than'e best way to describe it the taste of an alkaline on the back of my tongue. From my position on kitchen floor I could taste Esveidrenaline. Clear, Is, he had steeled hersel for Denny's racing absences; she was not prepared for his imprompt u practices in Sonoma, and she was angry and afraid.

I hear d chair legs scrape as a chair was pushed back. I hear d pl at es being st acked, fl at war e ner vous l y gat her ed.

"Eat your nuggets," Eve said again, this time sternly

"I 'm ful l ," Zoë decl ar ed.

"You haven't eat en anyt hing. How can you be ful l?"

"I don't like nugget s."

"You're not leaving the table until you eat your nuggets."

"I DON'T LI KE NUGGETS!" Zoë shrieked, and suddenly the worl was a very dark place.

Anxiet y Ant icipat ion. Excit ement . Ant ipat Axyl these emotions have distinctive smell, many of which were exuding from the dining room at moment.

Aft er a long sil ence, Denny said, "I'll make you a hot dog."

"No," Eve said. "She'll eat the nuggets. She likes nuggetsssj**he**t being difficult. Eat!"

Anot her pause, and t hen t he sound of a chil d gagging.

Denny al most laughed. "I 'll make her a hot dog," he said again.

"She's going to eat the goddamn nuggets!" Eve shout ed.

"She doesn't like the nuggets. I 'll make her a hot dog," Denny repl fir ml y

"No, you won't! She likes the nuggets, shejust doing this because you're here. I 'm not making a new dinner every time she decides she doesn't like something. She asked for the fucking nuggets, now she'll eat he fucking nuggets!"

Fur y has a ver y distinct ive smell, too.

Zoë started to crly went to the door and looked in. Eve was standing the head of the table, her face red and pinched. Zoë was sobbing into her nuggets. Denny stood to make himself seem biggets' important for the all phato be biggerOften just posturing can get a member of the pack to back down.

"You'r e over react ing," he said. "Why don'you go l ie down and l et me finish up her e."

"You al ways take her side!" Eve barked.

"I just want her to have a dinner she'll eat."

"Fine," Eve hissed. "I'll make her a hot dog, then."

Eve whirled from the table and almost crushed me when she burst the kit chen. She threw open the freezer door and snatched a package of the dogs, turned on the faucet and held the package under the running water She grabbed a knife from the block and stabbed into the package, and the when the evening turned from one filled with pertrapheral expuments to one

marked by undeniable and permanent evidence. As if the knife had a will its own and wanted to get involved in the fracas, the blade leapt from twet, frozen package and sliced deep and clean into the fleshy webbing of Eve's left palm, between her thumb and fingers.

The knife cl at t er ed in t he sink, and E ve grabbed her hand wit h a wail Wat er y drops of bl ood speckl ed t he backspl as h. Denny was t her e in a moment wit h a dishcl ot h.

"Let me see it," he said, peel ing the blood-soaked cloth from her ha which she held by the wrist as if it were no longer a part of her body busome alien creature that had attacked her

"We shoul d t ake you t o t he hospit al," he said.

"No!" she bel l owed. "No hospit al!"

"You need st it ches," he said, examining the gushing wound.

She didn't answer immediatel but her eyes were fill with tears. Not from pain, but from fearShe was so afraid of doctors and hospitals. She was afraid that she might go in and they would never let her out.

"Pl ease," she whis per ed t o DennyPl ease. No hos pit al."

He groaned and shook his head.

"I'll see if I can close it," he said.

Zoë st ood next to me, sil ent, eyes wide, hol ding a chicken nugget, wat ching. Neit her of us knew what to do.

"Zoë, baby," Denny said. "Can you find the but terfly closures for met he hall closet?eWl get Mommy all patched up, okay?"

Zoë didn't move. How coul d she? She knew she was the cause of Mommy's pain. It was her blood that Eve was bleeding.

"Zoë, pl ease," Denny said, l ift ing Eve to her feet. "Bl ue and white b red l et ters. Look for the 'B' waterfl."

Zoë headed off to find the box. Denny guided Eve to the bathroom and closed the doorl heard Eve cry out in pain.

When Zoë r et ur ned wit h t he box of bandages, s he didnknow wher e her par ent s had gone, so I wal ked her t o t he bat hr oom door and bar ked Denny opened t he door a crack and t ook t he bandages.

"Thanks, Zoë. I'll take care of Mommow. You can go play or wat ch TV."

He cl os ed t he door

Zoë looked at me for a moment with concern in her eyes, and I want to help herI walked toward the living rownd looked back. She still hesit at ed, so I went to get. henudged her and tried again; this time she followed me. I sat before the television and wait ed for her to turn it c which she did. And we wat ched*Ki ds Next Door.* And then Denny and Eve appear ed.

They saw us wat ching TV t oget hearnd t hey seemed somehow relieved. They sat next to Zoë and wat ched along with us, not saying a word. Who the show was over Eve pressed the mute but ton on the remote.

"The cut isn't very bad," she said to Zoë. "I f you're still hungran make you a hot dog...."

Zoë shook her head.

And then E ve started sobbing. Sitting on the couch, exposed to the world, she collapsed into herself; I could see hegyeimeplode.

"I'm so sor yyshe cried.

Denny put his arm around her shoul der and hel d.her

"I don't want to be like this," she sobbed. "Inot me. I 'm so sor ily don't want to be mean. Istn'ot who I am."

Beware, I thought. The zebra hides everywhere.

Zoë grabbed her mot her and hel d t ight, which unleashed a flood of t from bot h of t hem, and t hey were joined by Dennyho hovered over them like a firefighting helicopt, chumping his bucket of tears on the fire.

I left. Not because I felt they want edtheir pibiedaicewe me. I left because I felt that they had resolved their issues and all was good in two rld.

And, also, I was hungry

I wander ed int o t he dining room and scanned t he floor for dropping. There was nt much. But in the kit chen I found something good. A nugget

Zoë must have dropped it after Eve cut herself. It looked like a fai snack to me, something to tide me over until they got over their cuddly moment and remembered to feed me. I streid the nugget, and I recoiled in disgust. It was bad! I feed fagain. Rancid. Foul. Disease laden! The nuggets had been in the freezer toolong, or out of the freezer toolong. both, I concluded, having witnessed what littleregard people pay to t grocery sacks. This nugget—and probably all the others on the platedefinitely turned.

I felt bad for Zoë: all she'd had to do was say that the nuggets did tasteright, and this incident would have been avoided. But Eve would hound a way to hurt herself anyway suppose. They needed this. This moment. It was important to them as a family understood that.

In racing, they say that your car goes where your eyes go. The drive who cannot tear his eyes away from the wall as he spins out of control meet that wall; the driver who looks down the track as he feels his till break free will regain control of his vehicle.

Your car goes where your eyes go. Simply another way of saying tha which you manifest is before you.

I know its't rue; racing does ti'l ie.

When Denny went away the following week, we went to Esverar ents' house so they could take care of us. Esverand was bandaged up, which indicated to methat the cut was worse than she had let on. But it didn slow her down much.

Maxwell and Tish, the Wins, lived in a very fancy house on alge parcel of wooded land on Mercer I sland, with an amazing view of Lake Washingt on and Seattle. And for having such a beautiful place to live, twere among the most unhappy people I 've ever met. Not hing was good enough for them. They were always complaining about how things could better or why things were as bad as they were. When we arrived, they started in about Denny right aways doesn't spend enough time with Zoë. He's neglecting youred ationship. His dog needs a bath ike my hygiene had anything to do with it.

"What are you going to do?" Maxwell asked her

They were standing around in the kit chen whiTeish cooked dinner making something that Zoë would inevitably hat e. It was a warm sprir evening, so the Twins were wearing poloshirts with their slacks. Maxwand Trish were drinking Manhattans with cherries, Eve, a glass of wine had rejected the painkillerforfed to her which was left over from the hernia operation Maxwell had undgone a few months before.

"I'm going to get in shape," Eve said. "I feel fat."

"But you're so thin," rTsh said.

"You can feel fat even if you're t hin. I feel out of shape."

"Oh."

"I mean about Denny Maxwell said.

"What do I need to do about Denny?" Eve as ked.

"Somethi ng!What is he contributing to your familYou make all the money!"

"He's my husband and he's Zoë's fat her and I love him. What else doe he need to contribute to our family?"

Maxwel 1 snort ed and slapped the count effl inched.

"You'r e s car ing t he dog," flish point ed out. She r ar el y cal l ed me by name. They do t hat in prisoner of war camps, I 've hear d. Depersonal iza

"I 'm just frustrated," Maxwell said. "I want the best for my girl: Whenever you come to stay here, it because he's gone racing. I is not good for you."

"This season is really important for his car Feve said, trying to remain steadfast. "I wish I were able to be more involved, but I'm do best I can, and he appreciates that. What It does dis you going after me for it."

"I'm sor;"yMaxwell said, holding up his hands in surrender'm sorryI just want what best for you."

"I know Daddy," Eve said, and she leaned for ward and kissed his cheek. "I want what 'best for me, too."

She took her wine out side into the backyard, and I lingered. Maxwel opened the refrigerator and retrieved a jar of the hot peppers he liked t He was always eating peppers. He opened the jar and squeezed his finger inside, extracted a long pepper oncini, and crunched into it.

"Do you see how frail she' got ten?" Tish asked. "Like a whippet. But she feel sat."

He shook his head. "My daught erwit h a mechanic—no, not a mechanic. A *customer servi ce techni ci a*Wher e did we go wr ong?"

"She's al ways made her own choices," rlish said.

"But at least her choices made sense. She major ed in art his floor y Christs's ake. She ends up with him?"

"The dog is wat ching you," **T**ish said aft er a moment . "Maybe he want s a pepper"

Maxwel ls' expression changed.

"Want a treat, boy?" he asked, holding out a pepper oncini.

That was not why I had been wat ching him. I was wat ching him to bet glean the meaning of his words. Still, I was hungerly snfed at the pepper.

"They'r e good," he prompt ed. "I mport ed from I.'t al y

I took the pepper from him and immediately felt a prickly sensatio my tongue. I bit down, and a burning liquid filled my mout h. I quickly swallowed and thought I was done with the discomfort—surely the acmy stomach would cancel out the acid of the pepper—but shahen the pain really began. My throat felt as if it had been scraped Maywettomach churned. I immediately left the room and the house. Out side the back of I lapped at my bowl of wathat it did little to help. I made my way to near by shrub and lay down in its shade and rested until the burning were away.

When they took me out that night <code>riTh</code> and Maxwell did, as Zoë and Eve had long been as leep—they stood at the back porch and repeated tl silly mantra, "Get busyoy, get busy!" Still feeling somewhat questsy ventured away from the house farther than I usually did, crouched in n stance, and shat. After I did my business, I saw that my stool was low water yand when I sniffed at it, it was unusually foul-smelling. I knew was safe and the ordeal had passed; still, since that time I have been w trying new foods that might upset my system, and I have never accept a food from someone I didn'fully trust.

The weeks tripped by with tremendous haste, as if digging into the fall the most important mission of all. There was no lingering on accomplishment: Denny got his first victory in Laguna in early June, h pegged a podium finish—third place—at Road Atlanta, and he finished eight hin Denver That week with the boys in Sonoma had worked out the kinks with the crewand it was all on Denny's houlders And his shoulders were broad.

That summer when we gat hered around the dinner table, there was something to talk about Aphies. Photographs. Replays on television laat night. Suddenly people were hanging around, coming over for dinner Not just Mike from work—where they were happy to accommodate Denny's crazy schedule—but others, too. NASCAR veterant RerCope. Motorsports Hall of Famer Chip HanaWer were even introduced to Luc Pantoni, a very powerful man at Ferrari headquarters in Maranell, o, It who was in Seattle visiting Don Kitch, Seattle'remier racing tut. dr never broke myrule about the dining room, I have too much integrity for that. But I sat upon the threshold, I assure you. My toenails edged or line so that I could be that much closer to greatness. I learned more racing in those few weeks than I had in all my prior years of watching and television; to hear the estimable Ross Bencoach of champions, speak about breathing breathing!—was absolutely stunning.

Zoë chat t er ed away const ant hyways somet hing to sayl ways somet hing to show he would sit on Denny' knee with her big eyes absorbing every word of the conversation, and at an appropriate momen she would declare some racing truth Denny had taught her—"slow han the fast stiffast hands in the slow stiffor something like that—and all the big men would be suitably impressed. I was proud of her in those moments; since I was unable to impress the racing men with my own knowledge, the next best thing was to experience it vicariously throug Zoë.

Eve was happy again: she took what she called "mat" classes and gained muscle tone, and often alerted Denny to the needs of her fertile sometimes with great gency. Her health had greatly improved with no explanation: no more headaches, no more nausea. She continued to have trouble with her injured hand, oddhyd sometimes she used a wrist support to help her grip when cooking. Still, from what I heard in the bedroom late at night, her hands retained all of the necessary flexibili suppleness to make Denny and herself very happy

Yet for every peak there is a vall Dyenny's next race was pivotal, as a good finish would solidify his position as rookie of the y tant that race, at Phoenix I nternational Raceway enny got tagged in the first turn.

This is a rule of racing: No race has ever been won in the first corner many have been lost there.

He got caught in a bad spot. Someone tried to late-brake him going it he corner and locked it upiffes don't work if they aren'rolling. In fullout skid, the hard chaper slammed into Denny'left front wheel, destroying the cast alignment. The toe was skewed so badly that his car crabbed up the track, scrubbing seconds on laptime.

Al ignment, lat e-braking, locking up, toe-in: mer goan: These are simply the terms we use to explain the phenomena around us. What ma is not how precisely we can explain the event, but the event itself and i consequence, which was that Dennys' car was broken. He finished the race but he finished DFL. Thas what he called it when he told me about it. A

new cat egoryThere's DNS: Did Not Start. TheseDNF: Did Not Finish. And there's DFL: Dead Fucking Last.

"I t just doestn's eem fair" Eve said. "I t was the other dr'isvefault."

"I f it was anybody'fault," Denny said, "it was mine for being where could get collected."

This is something I 'd heard him say before: getting angry at anothe driver for a driving incident is point lesou Meed to watch the drivers around you, understand their skill, confidence, and aggression levels, a drive with them according know who is driving next to you. Any problems that may occur have ultimately been caused by you, because y are responsible for where you are and what you are doing there.

Still, fault or no, Denny was crushed. Zoë was crushed. Eve was crushed. I was decimated. Whad come so close to great nesse Wad smelled it, and it smelled like roast pig. Everybody likes the smell or pig. But what is worse, smelling the roast and not feasting, or not smether oast at all?

August was hot and drynd the grass all around the neighborhood webrown and dead. Denny spent his time doing math. By his figuring, it was still possible for him to finish in the top ten in the series and likely we rookie of the yearand either result would assure him of getting another the following year

We sat on the back porch basking in the early evening sun, the smell Denny's freshly baked oat meal cookies wafting from the kitchen. Zoë running in the sprinkleDenny massaging Eves hand gentlygiving it life. I was on the deck doing my best impression of an iguana: soakingalp the heat I could to warm my blood, hoping that if I absorbed enough, it wo carry me through the wint which would likely be harsh, cold, dark, and bitteras a hot Seattle summer usually portends.

"Maybe it isn't meant to be," Eve said.

"I t'll happen when it happens," Denny t ol d her

"But you're never here anymore when I 'm ovul at ing."

"So come with me next week. Zoë will love it; we'll stay where the have a pool. She loves anything with a pool. And you can come to the tr for the race."

"I can't go to the track," Eve said. "Not notwomean, I wish I could, I really do. But I 've been feeling good latyeduy know? And...I 'm afraid. The track is so loud and it hot, and it smells like rubber and gas, and the radio blasts static into my ears, and ever you be outing at each other so they can be heard. It might give me a—I might react badly to it."

Denny smil ed and sighed. Even Eve cracked a smil e.

"Do you under st and?" she as ked.

"I do," Denny ans wer ed.

I did, too. Everything about the track. The sounds, the smellking through the paddock and feeling the engy, the heat of race motors emanating from each pit. The electricity that ripples up and down the paddock when the announcer calls the next race group to pre-gradce wing the frantic scramble of a standing start, and then imagining the possibility putting together the story of whypoing on when the cars are out of sight on other parts of the race cuit until they come around to start/finish as in an entirely different or derdodging and drafting and making runs and diving into the next turn that can flip everything upside down again. De and I fed of it; it gave us life. But I totally understood that what fill with energy could be toxic to someone else, especially Eve.

"We could use a turkey bast, "iDenny said, and Evel aughed hard, harder than I'd seen her laugh in a long time. "I could leave you with cupful of potential babies in the refriger, "athersaid, and she laughed even harder I didn't get the joke, but Eve thought it was hysterical.

She got up and went into the house, reappearing a moment later wit turkey baster from the kit chen. She scrut inized it with a devious smile her fingers along its length.

"Hmm," she said. "Maybe."

They giggled together and looked out to the lawn and I looked with them and we all watched Zoë, her wethair clinging to her shoulders in glistening locks. Her childish bikini and tanned feet. Pure joy as she rar circles around the sprinkleer shrieks and squeals and laughs echoing through the Central District streets.

Your car goes where your eyes go.

We went to Denny Creek, not because it was named after Denny—it wasn't—but because it was such an enjoyable hike, Zoë clumping along her first pair of was such an enjoyable hike, Zoë clumping along her first pair of was such an enjoyable hike, Zoë clumping along her first pair of was such an enjoyable hike, Zoë clumping along her first pair of was palent, cool under the canopy of cedars and alder beat en path packed down, making long strides easys of the beat en path where dogs prefer—a soft and spongy bed of fallen needles that rot and feed the trees with a steady trickle of nutrients. And the smell!

The smel l would have given me an erection if I 'd stil l had testicle Richness and fertil it Growth and death and food and decayWaiting. J ust waiting for someone to smel lit, lingering close to the ground in layer distinct scenwith its own aromatic weight, its own place. A good nose l mine can separate each odorident if yenjoy. I rarely let myself go, practicing to be restrained like men are, but that summeridering the joy of all that we had, Denny's uccess and Zoës' exuberance and even Eve, who was light and free, I ranthrough those woods that day wilked by crazy dog, diving through the bushes, over the fallentrees, giving gent chase to chipmunks, barking at the jays, rolling over and scratching my back on the sticks and leaves and needles and earth.

We made our way along the path, upthe hills and down, over the roand past the rock out croppings, eventually arriving at the Slippery Slathey are called, where the creek runs over a series of broad, flat rocks pooling at some points, streaming at others. Childrenlove the Slipper Slabs as they slide and slice through the sluices and slate. And so we arrived and I drank the wateold and fresh, the last of that is sumow melt. Zoë and Denny and Eve stripped down to their swimsuits and bat gently in the waters. Zoë was old enough to safely navigate parts hers and Denny took the lower and Eve took the upper and they slid Zoë dow the stream of wat, but when wet, there was a film on them that made them quiteslick. Down she would go, squealing and squirming, splashint othe frigid pool at Dennyfeet; he would snatch her up and whisk her back to Eve, who would slide her down again. And again.

People, like dogs, love repet it ion. Chasing a ball, lapping a course ir ace car, sliding down a slide. Because as much as each incident is simil a so it is different. Denny rushed up the slab and handed for oe. He returned to his spot by the pool. Evelowered Zoë into the water; she screamed flung herself in playlid down the slab to be caught by Denny again.

Until once. Eve dipped Zoë int othe wat but instead of screaming and splashing, Zoë suddenly pulled her toes from the icy wappetting Eve' bal ance. Eve shifted her weight and somehow managed to release Zoë safely ont othe dry rock, but her move was too abrupt, too sudden—an overcorrection. Her foot touched the creek, and she didne'al ize how slippery those rocks were, slippery slabs like glass.

Her legs went out from under neat h.har reached out, but her hand grasped only the air; her fist closed, empley head hit the rock with a loud crack and bounced. It hit and bounced and hit again, like a rubber b

We stood, it seemed like for a long time, waiting to see what was go to happen. Eve lay unmoving, and there was Zoë, again the cause, not knowing what to do. She looked at her fat harho quickly bounded up to them both.

[&]quot;Ar e you okay?"

Eve bl inked har d, painful l There was bl ood in her mout h.

"I bit my tongue," she said woozil y

"How's your head?" Denny as ked.

"—Hurts."

"Can you make it back to the car?"

With me in the lead her ding Zoë, Denny steered Eve. She wasn' staggering, but she was lost, and who knows where she would have end up if someone hadn't been with herIt was early evening when we got to hospital in Bellevue.

"You probably have a minor concussion," Denny said. "But they shou check it out."

"I'm okay" Everepeated over and overBut clearly she wasnokay. She was dazed and slurring her words and she kept nodding buft. Denny would wake her up, saying something about not falling as leep when you have a concussion.

They all went inside and left me in the car with the windows open a crack. I settled into the pocket like passenger seat of **DEMW** 3.0 CSi and for ced myself to sleep; when I sleep, I tdfeel the upeto urinate nearly as badly as when I am awake.

In Mongolia, when a dog dies, he is buried high in the hills so people cannot walk on his grave. The dog'master whispers into the dog'ar his wishes that the dog will return as a man in his next life. Then his tail i off and put beneath his head, and a piece of meat or fat is placed in his mouth to sustain his soul on its journey; before he is reincarnated, the soul is freed to travel the land, to run across the high desert plains following as it would like.

I learned that from a program on the National Geographic Channel believe it is true. Not all dogs return as men, they say; only those who ready.

I am ready

It was hours before Denny returned, and he returned alone. He let me and I barely could scramble from the seat before unleashing a torrent urine on the lamppost in front of me.

"Sorryboy," he said. "I didn't forget about you."

When I had finished, he opened a package of peanut but ter sandwich crackers he must have got ten from a vending machine. I love those cract he best. Ist'he salt and the but ter in the crackers mixed with the fat i peanuts. I tried to eat slowdworing each bite, but I was too hungry and swallowed them so quickly I barely got to taste them. What a shame waste something so wonderful on a dog. Sometimes I hate what I am smuch.

We sat on the berm for quite a long time, not speakingnything. He seemed upset, and when he was upset, I knew the best thing I could do be available for him. So I lay next to him and waited.

Parking lots are weird places. People love their cars so much when are moving, but they hurry away from them so quickly when they stop moving. People are loath to sit in a parked car for long. They are afraid someone might judge them for it, I think. The only people who sit in pacars are police and stalkers, and sometimes taxi drivers on a break, but

usually only when they're eating. Whereas me, I can sit in a parked car hours and nobody thinks to ask. Odd. I could be a stalker dog, and then what would happen? But in that hospital parkinglot, with its very blablacktop, warmlike a sweater just removed, and its very white whitel painted with sugical care, people parked their cars and from them. Sprinted into the building. Or scurried out of the building and into thei cars, quick to drive away with no mirror adjustment, no assessment of gauges, like a get away car

Denny and I sat at length and watched them, the comers and goers, did not hing more than breathe; we did not need conversation to communicate with each other After a while, a car pulled into the parking lot and parked near us. It was beautiful, a 1974 Alfa Romeo GTV in pir green with a factory-installed fabric sunroof, in mint condition. Mike gout slowly and walked toward us.

I greet ed him, and he gave me a per funct or y pat on **hea**d. He continued over to Denny and sat down in my spot on the berm. I tried t must er some joy because the mood was definitely down, but Mike pushe me away when I went to nuzzle him.

"I appreciate this, Mike," Denny said.

"Hey, man, no probl em. What about Zoë?"

"Eve's dad took her to their house and put her to bed."

Mike nodded. The crickets were louder than the **fic** aff om the near by I nt erst at e 405, but not by much. Not ened to them, a concert of cricket wind, leaves, cars, and fans on the roof of the hospit al building.

Here's why I will be a good person. Because I listen. I cannot spead I listen very well. I never interrupt, I never deflect the course of the conversation with a comment of my own. People, if you pay attention to them, change the direction of one another conversations constant I ys' like having a passenger in your car who suddenly grabs the steering who and turns you down a side street. For instance, if we met at a party and wanted to tell you a story about the time I needed to get a soccer bal

neighbor's yard but his dog chased me and I had to jump into a swimmin pool to escape, and I began telling the styonty hearing the words "soccer" and "neighbor" in the same sent ence, might interrupt and ment that your childhood neighbor was Pelé, the famous soccer player I might be courteous and say Didn't he play for the Cosmos of Newonk? Did you grow up in New York? And you might reply that, no, ygnew up in Brazil on the streets of Corações with Pelé, and I might, say thought you were from Einessee, and you might say not original had then go on to outline your geneal ogy at length. So my initial conversat gambit—that I had a funny story about being chased by my neighbord —would be totally lost, and only because you had to tell me all about Learn to isten I beg of you. Pretend you are a doglike me and listen to other people rather than steal their stories.

I list ened that night and I heard.

"How I ong wil I they keep her?" Mike as ked.

"They might not even do a biops.yThey might just go in and get it. Malignant or not, it it il causing problems. The headaches, the nausea, mood swings."

"Real l x" Mike deadpanned. "Mood s wings? Maybe*my* wife has a tumor"

It was a joke line, a throwaw by t Denny didn't have a sense of humor that night. He said sharp! 'y ts' not a tumor Mike. I ts' a mass. I ts' not a tumor until they test it."

"Sorry" Mike said. "I was...Sorr'yHe grabbed me by the scruffand gave me a shake. "Really rough," he said. "I'd be freaking out right now were you."

Denny stood up tall. For him. He was a't all gulyHe was a Formula One guy. Well proportioned and powerful, but scaled down. A flyweigh

"I am freaking out," he said.

Mike nodded t hought ful l y

"You don't look it. I guess that hy you're such a good drive," he said, and I looked at him quick! That was just what I was thinking.

"You don't mind st opping by my pl ace and get t ing his struf

Denny took out his key ring, picked through the bundle.

"The food is in the pant r.yGive him a cup and a half. He gets three of those chicken cookies before he goes to bed—take his bedsitn the bedroom. And take his dog. Just \$ayWhere's your dog?' and he'll find it, sometimes he hides it."

He found the house key and held it out for Mike, let ting the other kangle.

"I ts' t he same for bot h l ockshë said.

"We'll be fine," Mike said. "Do you want me to bring you some clot hes?"

"No," Denny said. "I'll go back in the morning and pack a bag if we'r st aying."

"You want me to bring these back?"

"I have Eves' inside."

No words, then, just crickets, wind, ficaffans blowing on the roof, a distant siren.

"You don't have to keep it inside," Mike said. 'My can let go. We're in a parking lot."

Denny looked down at his shoes, the same old three-quarter boots liked to hike in; he wanted a new paid knew because he'd told me, but he didn't want to spend theoney he said, and I think he held out hope that someone would give him a pair of boots for a birthday or Christ mas or

somet hing. But no one ever did. He had a hundred pair of driving gloves, but no one ever thought to give him a new pair of hiking boot \$ i \text{ \text{ken}}

He l ooked up at Mike.

"This is why she didn't want to go to the hospit al."

"What?" Mike as ked.

"This is what she was afraid of."

Mike nodded, but clearly he didn'underst and what Denny was saying

"What about your race next week?" he asked.

"I 'll call J onny t omor r ow and t ell him I 'm out for t he season," I said. "I have t o bhere."

Mike took me to our house to get my things. I was humiliated wher said, "Where's your dog?" I didn' want to admit that I still slept with stufed animal. But I did. I loved that dog, and Denny was right, I did during the day because I didn' want Zoë to as similate it into her collec and also because when people saw it they wanted to play tug and I thick tugging with my dog. And also, I was afraid of the virus that had possessed the zebra.

But I got my dog out of his hiding spot under the sofa and we climb back into Mike's Al fa and went to his house. His wife, who wasn'eally a wife but a man who was wife-like, asked how it all went and Mike brush him off right away and poured himself a drink.

"That guy is bottled so tight," Mike said. "SHgonna have an aneur ism or something."

Mike's wife picked up my dog t hat I had dropped on t he fl.oor

"We have to take this, too?" he asked.

"List en," Mike sighed, "ever yone needs a secur it y bl anket . What 'wr ong wit h t hat ?"

"It stinks," Mikewife said. "I'll wash it."

And he put it in the washing machine! My dog! He took the first toy that Denny ever gave me and stuck it into the washing machine...with soap! I couldn'believe it. I was stunned. No one had ever handled my d in such a way!

I wat ched through the glass window of the machine as it spun arounand around, sloshing with the suds, I wat cheanth they laughed at me. Not meanly They thought I was a dumb dog—all people do. They laugh and I wat ched and when it came out, they put it in the dryer with a tow and I waited. And when it was dryhey took it out and gave it to mently, Mike's wife, took it out and it was warm, and he handed it to me and said "Much bet terright?"

I want ed t o hat e him t hen. I want ed t o hat e t he world. I want ed t my own dog, a goofy st ufed animal t hat Denny gave me when I was just puppy. I was so angry with how our family had been suddenly t orn apar Zoë st uck with the Wins, Eve sick in a hospital, me shuttleflloke a foster child. And now my dog, washed clean of smell. I want ed to push everyone away and golive by myself with my ancest consthe high desert plains of Mongolia and guard the sheep and the ewes from the wolves.

When Tony handed me my dog, I $\,$ took it in my mout h out of respect. took it to my bed because that what Denny would have want ed me to do. And I $\,$ curled up with it.

And the irony? I liked it.

I liked my st**fre**d dog bet ter clean than smelwhich was something I never would have imagined, but which gave me something I could hold to. Some belief that the center of our family could not be fractured by chance occurrence, an accident all washing, an unexpected illness. Deep it the kernel of our family existed a bond; Denzoë, Eve, me, and even my

st ufed dog. However $\,t$ hings might $\,$ change around us, we woul d al ways $\,b$ t oget her

I was not privy to much, being a dog. I was not allowed into the hospinhear the hushed conversations, the diagnosis, the prognosis, the analys witness the doctor with the blue hat and blue gown whispering his misgivings, revealing the clues they all should have seen, unraveling to mysteries of the brain. No one confided in me. I was never consulted. Not hing was expected of me except that I do my business outside when called upon to do so, and that I stop barking when told to stop barking

Eve st ayed in the hospit al for a long timee W. Because there was so much for Denny to do, caring for both me and Zoë, as well as visiting E in the hospit al whenever possible, he decided that the best plan was to implement a template stem, rather than our usual spontaneous way of living. Whereas before, he and Eve sometimes took Zoë to dinner at a rest aurant, without Eve, we always at eat home. Whereas before, Denn sometimes fed Zoë breakfast at a feet shop, without Eve, breakfast was always eaten at home. The days consisted of a series of regimented ever Zoë at eher cereal while Denny made her a sack lunch consisting of a peanut butter and banana sandwich on whole grain bread, pot at o chips, t good cookies, and a small bottle of wat Denny then dropped Zoë at her summer camp, and continued on to work. At the end of the work Denny retrieved Zoë from camp and returned home to cook dinner while Zoë wat ched cartoons. After dinn Denny gave me my food and then took Zoë

to visit Eve. Lat, whey returned, Denny bat hed Zoë, read her a stand tucked her into bed. Denny then attended to what ever tasks needed attending, such as paying bills orgaing with the health insurance company about cost overruns and payment schedules and so forth. Weekends were spent levely at the hospital. It was not a very color fultolive. But it was redient. And considering the seriousness of Esve' illness, effcient was the best we could expect. My walks were infrequently trips to the dog park nonexistent. Little attention was paid to me Denny or Zoë. But I was ready to make that sacrifice in the interest of well-being and to preserve the family dynamic. I vowed not to be a sque wheel in any way

Aft er two weeks of this pattern, Maxwell anidhTofered to keep Zoë for a weekend, so as to aford Denny a bit of a respite. They told him he looked sicklyt hat he should take a vacation from his troubles, and Eve agreed. "I dont' want to see you this weekend," she said to him, at least that's what he told Zoë and me. Denny was ambival ent about the idea, I could tell as he packed Zosëovernight bag. He was hesitant tolet Zoë g But he did let her go, and then he and I were al Anned it felt very strange

We did all the things we used to doe Went jogging. We or dered delivery pizza for lunch. We pent the afternoon watching the fant astic movie Le Mans, in which Steve McQueen endures tragedy and pain in the ultimate test of courage and personal fortituel was which ed one of Denny's tapes featuring an onboard view of the grand Nürgening racetrack in Germany, filmed in the track heyday when the likes of Jackie Stewart ald im Clark raced its lengthy twenty-two-kilophie edurum Nordschleif, cor Northern Loop. After that, Denny took me to the Blue Dog Park that rew blocks away and he threw the ball for me. But even for that ventur our energy was wrong; a dog with darkness about him got after me and wat my throat with bared teeth everywhere I moved, so I contectinieve th tennis ball but was forced to stay close by Dennigie.

It all felt wrong. The absence of Eve and Zoë was wrong. There was somet hing missing in everything we did. Aft er we had bot heat en dinner we sat together in the kitchen, fidgeting. There was nothing for us to do

fidget. Because while we were going through the motions, doing what we always used to do, there was no joy in it what soever

Final l,yDenny stood. He took me out side, and I urinated for him. He gave me my usual bedt ime cookies, and then he said to me, &Ybe good."

He said, "I have to go see her

I followed him to the door; I wanted to go see oner

"No," he said to me. "You stay here. They wont' let you into the hospital."

I under stood; I went to my bed and l ay down.

"Thanks, Enzo," he said. And then he left.

He ret ur ned a few hours later the darkness, and he silently climbed into his bed with a shiver before the sheets got warm. I lifted my head he saw me.

"She's going to be okay" he said to me. "She's going to be okay"

She made me wear the bumblebee wings she had worn the previous Halloween. She dressed herself in her pink ballet out fit with the tull and the leot ard and stockings eWent out into the backyard and ran around together until her pink feet were stained with dirt.

Zoë and me, pl aying in the backyard on a sunny after noon. It was the Tuesday after her weekend with Maxwell affidish, and by then she had thankfully lost the sour vinegar smell that clung to her whenever she time at the Wins'house. Denny had left work early and picked up Zoë so they could go shopping for new sneakers and socks. When they got home Denny cleaned the house while Zoë and I playede Wanced and laughed and ran and pretended we were angels.

She called me over to the corner of the yard by the spigot. On the v chips lay one of her Barbie dolls. She kneel ed down before it.

"You'r e going to be okay" she said to the doll. "Ever yt hing is going be okay."

She unfol ded a dishcl ot h t hat she'd brought from t he house. In the dishcl ot h were scissors, a Sharpie pen, and masking t ape. She pul letchef dolls' head. She took the kit chen scissors and cuf Barbie's hair, down to

the plastic nub. She then drew a line on the doskull, all the while whispering soft \ \forall Everything going to be okay"

When she was done, she tore of a piece of masking tape and put it on the dolk'head. She pressed the head back onto the neck stub and laid the doll down. We both stared at it. Amoment of silence.

"Now she can go to heaven," Zoë said to me. "And I 'll live with Grandma and Grandpa."

I was disheart ened. Clearthy weekend of respite Maxwell and ish had offered Denny was a false one. I had no clear evidence, and yet I cosense it. For the wins, it had been a working weekend, an effort to establish an agenda. They were already sowing the seeds of their, story spinning the yarn of their propaganda, prophesying a future they hoped would come true.

Soon, Labor Day weekend came, and after that, Zoë was enrolled in sche"Real school," as she called it. Kinghert en. And she was so excited to go She picked out her clothes the night before her first behigt-bottom jeans and sneakers and a bright yellow blouse. She had her backpack, her lunc box, her pencil case, her not ebook. Who great ceremony Denny and I walked with her a block from our house to the corner of Martin Luther JrWay, and we waited for the bust hat would take her to her new elementary school. Whaited with a few other kids and parents from the neighborhood.

When the bus trundled over the hill, we were all so excited.

"Kiss me now" she said to Denny

"Now?"

"Not when the bus is here. I donwant Jessie to see."

Jessie was her best friend from preschool, who was going to be in t same kindergart en class.

Denny obliged and kissed her before the bus had stopped.

"Aft er school, you go to Ext ended Dane said. "Like we practiced yest er day at orient at ion. Remember?"

"Daddy!" she scol ded.

"I'll pick you up aft er Ext ended **Day**u wait in the classroom, and I come and get you."

"Daddy!"

She made a stern face at him, and for a second I could have sworn st was Eve. The fl ashing eyes. The fl ared nostrils. The bal anced stance an arms akimbo, the head cocked, ready for battle. She quickly turned and climbed onto the bus, and as she walked down the aisle, she turned and waved at us both before she took her seat next to her friend.

The bus pulled away and headed for school.

"Your first?" anot her fat her asked Denny

"Yeah," Denny replied. "My onl.yYou?"

"My third," the man said. "But therefor thing like your first. They grow up so fast."

"That they do," Denny said with a smile; we turned and walked home

"So it 's best."

Everything they said made sense, but none of it added up properly in my mind. It was an evening on which Denny took me along to the hospital twisit Eve, though I didnget to go inside. After the visit, Zoë and I wait in the car while Maxwell and Tsh joined Denny for a conference on the pavement. Zoë was immersed in a book of mazes, something sheloved to do; I list ened carefully to the conversation. Maxwell is indidited all of the talking.

```
"Of course, there has to be a nurse on duanyound the clock."

"They work in shifts—"

"They work in shifts, but still, the one on duty takes breaks."

"So someone needs to be there to help."

"And since we're al ways around."

"We have nowhere to go—"

"And you have to work."
```

"Yes, it's best."

Denny nodded wit hout convict ion. He got into the cand we drove off.

"When's Mommy coming home?" Zoë as ked.

"Soon," Denny said.

We were crossing the floating bridge, the one Zoë used to call the "90," when she was younger

"Mommy's going to stay with Grandma and Grandpa for a while," Denny said. "Until she feels bet.tles that okay with you?"

"I guess," Zoë said. "Why?"

"I t'll be easier for—" He broke of t'll be easier

A few days later Saturday Zoë, Denny, and I went to Maxwell and Trish's house. A bed had been set up in the living room. A genhospit al bed that moved up and down and tilted and did all sorts of things by touching a remote control, and that had a broad foot board from which had a clipboard, and that came stocked with a nurse, a crinkly older woman had a voice that sounded like she was singing whenever she spoke and whenever the spoke and whenever she spoke and whenever the nurse started fretting about more dismay, Maxwell concurred Denny was preoccupied, so I was shoved out side into the backyard; thankfully Zoë came to my rescue.

"Mommy's coming!" Zoë t ol d me.

She was very excit ed and wore the madras dress that she liked beca it was so prettand I found her excit ement infect ious so I joined in with I embraced the fest ivitay eal homecoming. Zoë and I played; she threw ball for me and I did tricks for, herd we rolled toget her in the grass. I was a wonderful day the family all toget her again. It felt very special

"She's here!" Denny called from the back doomd Zoë and I rushed to see; this time I was allowed inside. Expeother entered the house first, followed by a man in blue slacks and a yellow shirt with alogo on it we wheeled in a white figure with dead eyes, a mannequin in slippers. Maxwe and Dennylifted the figure and placed it in the bed and the nurse tucked in and Zoë said, "Hi, Mommy," and all this happened before it even entermy consciousness that this strange figure was not a dumoty a mock-up used for practice, but Eve.

Her head was covered with a stocking cap. Her cheeks were sunken, l skin, sallowShelift ed her head and looked around.

"I feel like a Christ mas tree," she said. "In the living room, every standing around me expecting something. I dom'ave any presents."

Uncomfort able chuckles from the onlookers.

And then she looked at me directly

"Enzo," she said. "Come her e."

I wagged my tail and approached cautious I yhadn't seen her since she went into the hospital, and I waspr'epared for what I sawt seemed to me the hospital had made her much sicker than she really was.

"He doesn't know what to think," Denny said for me.

"I ts' okay, E nzo," she said.

She dangled her hand of the side of the bed, and I bumped it with my nose. I didn't like any of this, all the new furniture, Evelooking limp a sad, people standing around like Christ mas without the presents. None seemed right. So even though everyone was staring at me, I fbed fover to Zoë and stood behind her looking out the windows into the backyard, which was dappled with sunlight.

"I think I 've feended him by being sick," she said.

That was not what I meant at all. My feelings were so complicated have difficulty explaining them with any clarity event patter I have lived through it and had time to reflect upon it. All I could do was mother bedside and lie down before her like a rug.

"I don't like seeing me like this eit lies he said.

The aft er noon was int er minable. Finally the dinner hour came, and Maxwell, Tish, and Denny poured themselves cocktails and the mood lift ed dramatical. An old photo album of Eve as a child was taken out from hiding and everyone laughed while the smell of garlic and oil floa from the kit chen where flish cooked the food. Eve took ofher cap and we marveled at her shaved head and grotesque scars. She showered with the lp of the nurse, and when she emged from the bathroom in one of her own dresses and not the hospital gown and robe, shelooked almost not hough there was a darkness behind her eyes, alook of resignation. She tried to read Zoë a book, but she said she coultdfocus well enough, so Zoë tried her best to read to Eve, and her best was fairly good. I wand into the kitchen, where Denny was again conferencing withish and Maxwell.

"We really think Zoë should stay with us," Maxwell said, "until...

"Until ..." Tish echoed, standing at the stove with her back to us.

So much of language is unspoken. So much of language is comprised c looks and gest ures and sounds that are not words. People are ignorant vast complexity of their own communication.iIh's robotic repeating of the single word "until" revealed everything about her state of mind.

"Unt ilwhat?" Denny demanded. I coul d hear the irrit at ion in his voic "How do you know what 's going to happen? You're condemning her to somet hing before you even know"

Trish dropped her frying pan ont othe burner with a loud clatter an begant osob. Maxwell wrapped his arms around her and enveloped her his embrace. He looked over at Denny

"Pl ease, Denny We have to face the real it y of it. Thect or said six to eight months. He was quite definite."

Trish pulled away from him and steadied herself, fædifn her tears.

"My baby," she whis per ed.

"Zoë is just a chil d," Maxwel l cont inued. "This is val uable t ime—t] onlyt ime she has to spend with Eve. I dainhagi ne—I can't beli eve for a second—t hat you would possibly object."

"You're such a caring person, Trish added.

I coul d see t hat Denny was stuck. He had agreed to have Eve stay v Maxwel l and Tish, and now t hey want ed Zoë, t oo. I f he object ed, he wou be keeping a mot her and a daught er apart. I f he accept ed t heir proposal woul d be pushed to the peripherbye woul d become an outsider in his own famil \mathbf{y}

"I under st and what you're saying—" Denny said.

"We knew you woul d," Trish interrupted.

"But I'll have to talk to Zoë about it to see what she wants."

Trish and Maxwell looked at each other uneasily

"You can't seriously consider asking a little girl what she wants," Maxwell snorted. "Shæfivefor God's sake! She can't—"

"I 'll talk to Zoë to see what she wants," Denny repeated firmly

Aft er dinnerhe took Zoë int othe backyard, and they sat together on terrace steps.

"Mommy would like it if you stayed here with her and Grandma and Grandpa," he said. "What do you think about that?"

She turned it over in her head.

"What doyou t hink about it?" she asked.

"Well," Denny said, "It hink maybesitt he best thing. Mommy has missed you so much, and she want sto spend more time with you. It wo just be for a little while. Untilssbeet'ter and can come home."

"Oh," Zoë said. "I still get to take the bus to school?"

"Well," Denny said, thinking. "Probably not. Not for a while. Grand or Grandpa will drive you to school and pick you up, I think. When Mommy feels bette you both will come home, then you can take the bus again."

"Oh."

"I'll come and visit ever y da Denny said. "And we'll spend weekends toget herand sometimes you'll stay with me, too. But Mommy really wants you with her

Zoë nodded somber l y

"Gr andma and Gr andpa real ly want me, too," she said.

Denny was clearly upset, but he was hiding it in a way that I thoug little kids didnunderstand. But Zoë was very smart, like her falken at five years old, she understood.

"I ts' okay, Daddy," she said. "I know you wont'l eave me her e for ever

He smil ed at her and took her little-kid hand and hel dit in his own kissed her on the for ehead.

"I promise I will never dothat," he said.

It was agreed then, perhaps to neither of their satisfaction, that sl would stay

I marvel ed at them both; howfitfult it must be to be a person. T constantly subvert your desires wbrry about doing the right thing, rat

than doing what is most expedient. At that moment, honesthad grave doubts as to my ability to interact on such a level. I wondered if I conbecome the human I hoped to be.

As the night wound down, I found Denny sitting in the fædudhair next to Eves' bed, ner vous ly tapping his hand against his leg.

"This is crazy" Denny said. "I'm going to st,atyoo. I'll sleep on the couch."

"No, Denny," Eve said. "You'll be so uncomfort able—"

"I 've slept on plent y of couches in my life. finte."

"Denny, pl eas e—"

There was something about the tone of her voice, something pleadin her eyes, that made him stop.

"Pl ease go home," she said.

He s cr at ched t he back of his neck and l ooked down.

"Zoë is here," he said. "Your folks are here. Ya've told me you want Enzo to stay with you tonight. But you send me away? What did I do?"

She sighed deeply She was very tired and seemed like she hadn't he energy to explain it to Denny she tried.

"Zoë won't remember" she said. "I dont' care what myparent sthink. And Enzo—well, Enzo under stands. But I tdownintyou to see melike this."

"Like what?"

"Look at me," she said. "My head is shaved. My face looks old. My breat h smells like I 'm rotting inside. I 'm ugly—"

"I don't care what you look like," he said. "I see you. I see who you really are."

"I care what I look like," she said, trying to must er her old Eve sn "When I look at you, I see my reflection in your eyes. It down't to be ugly in front of you."

Denny turned away as if to shield his eyes from, her if to take away the mirrors. He looked out the window into the backyard, which was lit with lights along the patsicage and more lights that were suspended in the trees, illuminating our lives. Out there, beyond the light, was the unknown. Everything that wastnus.

"I'll pack Zoë't hings and come back in the morning," he said, final, ly wit hout turning around.

"Thank you, Denny," Eve said, relieved. "You can take Enzo. I don' want you to feel abandoned."

"No," he said. "Enzo shoul d stayle misses you."

He kissed Eve good night, tucked Zoë into bed, and then he left me w Eve. I wasnt's ure why she want ed me around, but I understood why she want ed Denny to go: as he fell asleep that night, she want ed him to dre of her as she used to be, not as she currently was; she tlinkant Dennys' vision of her to be corrupted by her presence. Where didn't understand was Denny's ability to look beyond her physical condition. He was focus on the next turn. Perhaps if she had had the same abiltihings would have turned out dferently for her

The house grew quiet and dark, Zoë in bed, Maxwell and ish in their room with their TV blinking under the dobwe was settled into her bed the living room with the nurse sitting in a dark corner playing a page of word-search book, in which she circled the hidden messages. I lay next Eve's bed.

Lat eg E ve was as leep and the nurse nudged me with her foot. I lift ϵ my head and she held a finger to her lips and told me to be a good dog as

follow herwhich I did. She led me through the kit chen, through the lau room to the back of the house and she opened the door that led to the garage.

"I n you go," she said. "Wodon't want you dist ur bing Mrs. Swift dur in the night."

I looked at hepuzzled. Disturb Eve? Why would I dothat?

She took my hesit at ion as rebellion; she snat ched my collar and garajerk. She shoved me into the dark garage and closed the ddorheard her slippers tread awalyack into the house.

I was not afraid. All I knew was how dark it was in the garage.

It was not oo cold, and it was noverly unpleasant, if yohon't mind a concrete floor and the smell of engine oil in an absolutely pitch-black I'm surethere were no rats, as Maxwell kept a clean garage for his vacars. But I had never slept in a garage before.

The time clicked by Literall y wat ched it click by on an old electric clock that Maxwell kept on the workbench he never used. It was one o those old clocks with the numbers on little plastic tabs that rotate a spindle, illuminated by a small bulb, the only source of light in the rc Each minute was two clicks, the first when the little plastic half-num was released, the second when the half-number settled, revealing an er new number. Click-cli, aknd a minute went by Click-cli, aknd another And that how I passed my time in my prison, counting the clicks. And daydreaming about the movies I 've seen.

My two favorite actors are, in this order: Steve McQueen and Al Pacino. Bobby Deerfielist a very under appreciated film, as is Pacino' per for mance in it. My third favorite actor is Paul Newman, for his exce car-handling skills in the fills in nning and because he is a fant astic racer his own right and owns a Champ Car racing team, and finally cause he pur chases his palm fruit oil from renewable sources in Colombia and thereby discourages the decimation of vast tracts of rain for est in Bor and Sumatra. Geoge Clooney is my fourth favorite actor becauseshe'

except ionally clever at helping cure children of diseases on rereich, of and because he looks a littlelike me around the eyes. Dust if the first my fifth favorite actomostly because he did such great things for the Alfa Romeo trademark in the Graduate. Steve McQueen, though, is my first, and not only because of the Mansand Bullitt wo of the greatest car movie ever made. But also because that llone being a dog, I know what is like to be locked in a prison cell without hope, every day waiting for the slidoor to open and for a met al bowl of under nour is hing slop to be shoved through the slot.

Hours into my night mare, the garage door opened, and Eve was ther her night gown, sil houet ted by the night-light in the kit chen.

"Enzo?" she quest ioned.

I said not hing but I enged from the darkness, relieved to see her again.

"Come wit h me."

She led me back to the living room and she took a cushion from the sand placed it next to her bed. She told me to lie on it, and I did. Then so climbed into the bed and pulled up the sheets to her neck.

"I need you wit h me," she said. "Don'go away again."

But I hadn'gone away! I had been abduct ed!

I could feel the sleep pressing down on her

"I need you wit h me," she said. "I 'm so afr aid. I 'm so afr aid."

It's okay, I saidI'm hee.

She rolled to the edge of the bed and looked down at me, her eyes glazed.

"Get me through tonight," she sai@That's all I need. Protect me. Do let it happen tonight. Enzo, pleasou\ref{Y} e the only one who can help."

I will said.

"You're the only one. Don' worry about that nurse; I sent her home

I looked over to the cor, næmed the crinkly old woman was gone.

"I don't need her," she said. "Only you can protect me. Please. Don't et it happen tonight."

I didn't sleep at all that night. I stood guard, waiting for the demonshow his face. The demon was coming for Eve, but he would have to get past me first, and I was reallynoted every sound, every creak, every change in air densit yand by standing or shifting my weight, I silently n it clear to the demonthat he would have to contend with me if he intent to take Eve.

The demon st ayed away In the morning, the others awoke and cared Eve, and I was ablet orelinquish my guard duties and sleep.

"What a lazy dog," I heard Maxwell mutter as he passed me.

And then I felt Evenand on my neck, stroking. "Thank you," she said "Thank you."

For the first few weeks of our new arrangement —Denny and I lived in house, while Eve and Zoë lived with the Wins—Denny visited them every single evening after work, while I stayed home alone. By Halloween, Denny's pace had slowed, and by Thanksgiving, he visited them only twi during the week. Whenever he came home from the wins' house, he reported to me how good Evelooked and how much better she was gett and that she would be coming home soon. But I saw, hero, on the weekends, when he would take me to visit, and I knew wasn't getting betterand she wouldn't be coming home any time soon.

Every weekend, wit hout fail, bot h Denny and I visit ed wit h Eve on Sat ur day when we picked up Zoë, and again onSunday when we del iver ed her home aft er our sleepover; we frequent ly took our Sunday meal wit ext ended family I spent the occasional night with Eve in her living rook but she never needed me as much as she had that first night when she we so afraid. Zoës time with us should have been filled with jout she didn't seem alt oget her happylow could she be, living with her motherhowas dying, and not with her fat her was very much alive?

Zoë's school ing had briefly become a point of content ion. Shortly af she began staying with Maxwell and 16h, they asked to transfer Zoë to school on Mercer I sland, as traveling back and forth across the I-90 bridge twice a day was a burden for them. But Denny put down his foot,

knowing how much Zoë l oved her Madrona school. He insist ed she rema t here, as he was her fat her and l egal guardian, and also, he maint ained, since bot h Zoë and Eve would be moving home in the near future.

Frustrated by Denrsyintract abil it Maxwell offered to pay for Zoë's school ing if she enrolled in a private school located on Mercer I sland conversations were frequent and intense. But even in the face of Maxswe persistence, Denny proved that he had a bit of the Gila monster in himthough I dont' know whether on his mot herside or his father side—as his jaws never slackened. Eventually he prevailed, and Maxwell night were forced to commute twice daily across the lake.

"I f t hey'r e real l y doing it for Zoë and Eve," Denny saidet once, "it shoul dn't bot her t hem t o drive fift een minut es across t he l akee alt y no t hat far"

Denny missed Eve tremendous, by know but he missed Zoë just as much. I could see it most on those days when he kept Zoë overnight and got to walk her to her bus stop. Usually a Monday or a Thur Ondayhose mornings, our house seemed filled with electricity so that neither Den I needed the alarm clock to wake, but instead waited anxiously in the darkness until the hour came to rouse Zoë. Whit want to miss a single minute we could spend with her on those mornings, Denny was a different person altogether he way he solovingly packed her sacklunches, often writing a note on a piece of not epapeathought or a joke he hoped she would find at lunch and might make her smile. The way he took such car with her peanut butter and banana sandwiches, slicing the banana soth a each slice was exactly the same thickness. (I got to eat the extra bana those occasions, which I enjoyed. I love bananas almost as much as I l pancakes, my favor it e food.)

Aft er Zoë drove away on the yellow bus those days, the other fathe with the three children would sometime rof o buy us a coffee, and sometimes we would accept and we would all walk to Madison to the r bakery and drink cofee at the sidewalk tables. Until once, when the oth father said, "Your wife works?" Obviously he was trying to explain to himself Eves' absence.

"No," Denny replied. "She's recovering from brain cancer

The man dipped his head sadl y upon hearing the sit uation.

After that daywhenever we went to the bus stop, the man made hims busy talking to other people or checking his cell phonen were spoke to him again.

In Februar, the black pit of wint, ewe went on a trip to north-central Washington, to an area called the Methow Mey It is important for Unit States citizens to celebrate the birthdays of their greatest presidents the schools were closed for a week; Dep Zyoë, and I went to a cabin in the snowy mountains to celebrate. The cabin was owned by a relative of Evwhom I had never met. It was quite cold, too cold for me, though on twarmer afternoons I enjoyed running in the snbwmuch preferred to liel the baseboard heater and let the others do their exercises, skiing and snowshoeing and all of that. Eve, who was too weak to travel, and her parents were not there. But many others were, all of whom were relat some kind or another were only there, I overheard, because Eve had thought it was very ipport ant for Zoë to spend time with these people, she, Eve, someone said, would die very soon.

I didn't like that whole line of reasoning. First, that Eve would be soon. And second, that Zoë needed to spend time with people she had ne met because Eve would soon die. They might have been perfectly pleasa people, in their puffy pants and fleece vests and sweaters that smelled a sweat. I don'know But I wondered why they had waited for Esvil'lness to make themselves available for companionship.

There were a great many of them, and I had no idea who was connect to whom. They were all cousins, I understood, but there were certain

generational gaps that were confusing to me, and some of the people we without parents but were with uncles and aunts instead, and some migh have just been friends. Zoë and Denny kept mostly to themselves, but tstill participated in certain group events like horseback riding in the ssledding, and snowshoeing. The group meals were convivial, and though was determined to remain aloof, one of the cousins was always willing slip me at reat at meal time. And no one ever kicked me out from under very lage dining table where I lingered during dinmenent hough I was breaking my own personal code; a certain sense of lawlessness pervade house, what with children staying awake late into the night and adults sleeping at all hours of the day like dogs. Why shoul linhave part aken in the debauchery?

Conflict ed t hough I was, each night somet hing special happened t ha liked very much. Out side the house—which had many identical rooms, each wit h many ident ical beds to house the multitude—was a stone pat with a lage hearth. Apparently in the summer months, it was used for out door cooking, but it was used in the winter as well. It diame for the st ones, which were very cold and were sprinkled with salt pellets tha when t hey got wedged bet ween my pads, but I loved the hearth. Fire! Cracking and hot, it blazed in the evenings after dinamed they all gat her ed, bundl ed in their great coats, and one had a guitar and gloves wit hout finger tips and he pl ayed music while they all sang. It was wel below freezing, but I had my place next to the hearth. And the stars w could see! Billions of them, because the night was so intensely dark, as sounds in the distance, the snap of a snow-bur dened tree branch giving v to the wind. The barking of coyotes, my brethren, calling each other to hunt. And when the cold over powered the heat from the hearth, we all shuffled into the house and into our separaterooms, our fur and jackets smel ling of smoke and pine sap and flaming marshmal lows.

It was on one of the evenings while sitting around the firethat In Denny had an admirer. She was young, the sister of someone, whom Denn apparently had met years earlier athanks giving or an East elbecause his first comment to her and the others was about how much she had grown since he had seen her last. She was a teenager whood a full set of breasts for milking and hips wide enough for childbirth and so was, for all interpretations.

and purposes, an adult, but who still acted like a child, always asking permission to dothings.

This girl -not -yet -a-woman was named Annika, and she was very craf and al ways knew how to position herself and time her movements to fo meeting with DennyShe sat next to him around the fire. She sat across from him at meals. She al ways managed to be in the backseat of someon Suburban when he was in the backseat. She laughed tool oudly at every comment he made. She loved his hair after he took of sweaty ski cap. She proclaimed an extreme admiration for his hands. She doted on Zoë. She proclaimed at the mention of Eve. Denny was ignorant of her advances; I don't know if it was deliberate or not, but he certainly acted if he hadn't a clue.

Who is Achilles without his tendon? Who is Samson without Delila Who is Oedipus without his clubfoot? Mute by design, I have been able study the art of rhetoric unfettered by ego and self-interest, and so I the answers to these questions.

The true hero is fl awed. The true test of a champion is not whether can triumph, but whet her he can over come obstacles—preferably of his own making—in or der to triumph. A her o wit hout a fl aw is of no intere an audience or to the universe, which, after all, is based on conflict and opposition, the irresistible force meeting the unmovableet. Which is al so why Michael Schumachercl early one of the most gift ed Formul a C drivers of all time, winner of more races, winner of more championship hol der of more pol e positions than any other driver in Formul a One his is oft en l eft **6**fof t he r ace fand l ist of favor it e champions. He is unl ike Ayr t on Senna, who oft en empl oyed t he same devious and daring t act ics Schumacher, but did so with a wink and therefore was called charismati and emot ional rat her t han what t hey call Schumacher: remot e and unapproachable. Schumacher has no flaws. He has the best, the bestfinanced team, the best tires, the most skill. Who can rejoice in his win The sun rises every dayWhat is to love? Lock the sun in a box. For ceth sun to over come adversit y in order to r**The**n we will cheer! I will ofte admir e a beaut iful sunrise, but I will never consider the sun a champio having risen. So. For me to relate the history of Dewhy is a true

champion, wit hout including his misst eps and fail ings would be doing a disservice to all involved.

As the end of the week drew neathe weather reports on the radio changed, and Denny became quite tense. It was almost time to return to Seattle, and he wanted to leave, get back on the highway and drive the following over the mountain passes to our house on the other side, which, though cold and dark and wet, was mercifully without six feet of bases and subfreezing temperatures. He needed to get back to work, he said. A Zoë needed time to adjust to the school schedule. And...

And Annika needed to get back, too. A student at the Holy Names Academy, she needed to return so that she could consult with fellow students and prepare some kind of project they were working on that concerned sustainable living. She spoke of it wit beincy, but only after she understood that Denny was planning on heading west before any of to ther cousins. Only after she realized that if her needs and Demey'ds coincided, she might win for herself five hours next to him in his fixe hours of watching his hands hold the steering wheel, five hours of seein his tousled hat head, of inhaling his intoxicating pheromones.

The morning of our depart ure came, and the storm had settled in an windows of the cabin were pelted with a freezing rain the likes of which had never experienced. Denny fretted for most of the morning. The radio announced the closure of Stevens Pass because of the stomaction devices were required on Snoqual mie Pass.

"St ay! St ay!"

That is what they said, the insipid cousins. I hat edthem all. They smelled rank. Even when they showered, they put on their same sweat without washing them and their sour odor returned to them like a boomerang.

We at e l unch quickly and then we left, stopping at a gas station alo the way to pur chase chains for our tires. The drive south was horrific. If freezing rain accumulated on the windshield faster than the wipers coupush it awayand every few tedious miles, Denny would stop the car and get out to scrape away the icy glaze. It was dangerous driving, and It dlike it at all. I rode in the back with Zoë; Annika rode in the front. Ic see Denny's hands were gripping the steering wheel far too tightnlayrace car the hands must be relaxed, and Dennyal ways are when I see the incideos from his races; he often flexes his fingers to remind himself to rhis grip. But for that excruciating drive down the Columbia Ribermy held the wheel in a death grip.

I felt very badly for Zoë, who was clearly fright ened. The rear of t moved more suddenly than the front, and so she and I experienced more the slipping and sliding sensation generated by the ice. Thinking of how scared Zoë must have been, I worked myself into a state of agit at ion, a let myself get carried aw Before I knew it, I was in a full-blown panic pushed at the windows. I tried to clamber into the front seat, which w totally counterproductive. Denny finally barked, "Zoë, please settle I down!"

She grabbed me around the neck and held me tight I yfell against her as she lay back, and she started singing a song in my, when I remembered from her past, "Hello, little Enzo, so glad to see you...." She had just started preschool when she learned that song. She and Eve used to sing together I relaxed and let her cradle me. "Hello, little Enzo, so glad you, too..."

I would like to tell you that I am such a master of my destiny that contrived the entire situation, that I made mysædyfso Zoë could calm me on this trip, and thus would be distracted from her own agit at inth I be told, howeverI have to admit I was glad she was holding me; I was afraid, and I was grateful for her care.

The line of cars trudged steadily but slowlays cars were stopped or the side of the road to wait out the storm.weathermen and-women on the radio said waiting would be worse, however the front was stalled, ceiling was lowand when the warm air arrived as anticipated, the ice would turn to rain and the flooding would begin.

When we reached the turnoffor Highway 2, there was an announcement on the radio that Blewett Pass was closed because of a

jackknifed tract of rail er rig. Whould have to make a long det our to read I-90 near Geoge, Washington. Denny anticipated faster travel on I-90 because of its size, but it was worse, not before rains had begun, and the median was more like a spill way than a grassy divide bet ween east west. Still, we continued our journey because there was little else we do.

After seven hours of grueling travel and still two hours away from Seattle in good driving weat heddenny had Annika call her parents on her cell phone and ask them to find a place for us to stay somewhere near (Elum. But they called back soon and told us that all the motels were because of the storm. West opped at a McDonal d; and Denny purchased food for us to eat—I got chicken nuggets—then we pressed onward to East on.

Out side East on, where snow was piled on the sides of the highway Denny st opped his car alongside dozens of other cars and trucks in the chain-up area and ventured into the freezing rain. He lay down on the pavement and installed the tire chains, which took half an, laudrwhen he climbed back into the carbe was soaking wet and shivering.

"You poor thing," Annika said, and she rubbed his shoul ders to warn him.

"They're going to close the pass soon," Denny said. "That trucker he it on the radio."

"Can't we wait here?" Annika as ked.

"They expect flooding. I f we don'make it over the pass tonight, we might be stuck for days."

It was nast y and horrible, snowy and icy and freezing rain, but we pushed on, our little old BMW chugging up the mount ain until we react he summit where they have the skilifts, and then everything changed. There was no snowno ice, just rain. We rejoiced in the rain!

Short l, Denny stopped the car to remove the chains, which took another half hour and got him soaking again, and then we were going downhill. The windshield wipers flipped back and forth as quickly as the could, but they didn'help much. The visibility was terrible. Denny held wheel tightly and squinted into the darkness, and we eventually reache. North Bend and then Issaquah and then the floating bridge across Lake Washington. It was near midnight—the five-hour drive having taken mothan ten—when Annika called her parents and told them we had made it safely to Seattle. They were relieved. They told her—and she related—that the news had reported flash-flooding conditions that caused a reslide closing west bound I-90 near the summit.

"We must have just missed it," Denny said. "Thank God."

Beware the whimsy of Fate, I said to mysel f. She is a mean bit ch of lab.

"No, no," Annika said int o her phone. "I'll stay with Delhey's too exhaust ed to keep driving, and Zoë is sleeping in the backseat; she shoul be put to bed. Denny said he' happy to drive me home in the morning."

This made Denny turn and look at her questioning windering if he had actually said anything like that. Of course, I knew he had minika smiled at him and winked. She ended her call and slipped her phone into her bag. "We're almost there," she said, looking ahead out the windshiel her breaths shallow with anticipation.

Why he didn't take action at that moment. Why he didget right back on the freeway and drive up to Edmonds, where her family lived. Why he said not hing. I'll never knower haps, on some level, he needed to connec with someone who reminded him of the passion he and Eve used to share Perhaps.

Back at the house, Denny carried Zoë to her room and put her to sle He turned on the tel evision, and weat ched the foot age of Snoqual mie Pass being shut down by the authorities, only for a few days, they predichopefully though possibly for a week or more. Denny went into the bat hroom and shed his wet clot hes; he returned wearing sweat pants an old Tshirt. He pulled a beer from the refrigerator and opened it.

"Can I take a shower?" Annika as ked.

Denny seemed startled. iWh all of the heroics he had been up to, he had most fogotten about her

He showed her where the towels were, how to work the handheld shower temperature thing, and then he closed the door

He got the extra sheets and pillows and blankets, unfolded the coutheliving room, and made the temporary bed for Annika. When he was done, he went into his bedroom and sat on the end of his own bed.

"I'm fried," he said to me, and then he fell backward so he was lying the bed, his hands on his chest, his feet still on the, this look nees dangling over the edge of the bed, and the rest of him as leep even though the light the room were still on. I lay on the floor near him and fell as leep as '

I opened my eyes and saw her standing over him. Her hair was wet a she wore Dennys bat hrobe. She said not hing. She wat ched him sleep for several minutes, and I wat ched. Her was spooky behavion reepy I didn't like it. She opened her robe, exposing a sliver of pale white flash tattoo of a sunburst encircling her belly button. She diplenik. She shrugged of her robe and stood naked, her leasts with their brown nipples pointing at him. Still, he was unconscious. Asleep.

She reached down and slipped her small hands into the band of his sweat pants. She pulled his pants down to his knees.

"Don't," he mut tered, his eyes still closed.

He had driven for more than ten hours across a harrowing course of snow and ice and flooding. He had not hing left with which to fend and at tack.

She pulled his pants down to his ankles, then lifted one foot and the theother to remove them complet to oked at me.

"Shoo," she said.

I didn't shoo. I was too angrAynd yet I didnt' at tack, eit he somet hing was hol ding me back. The zebra keeps dancing.

She gave me a dismissive look and turned her at tention toward Deni

"Don't," he said, sl eepil y

"Shhh," she soot hed. "Ist àl l good."

I have fait h. I will always have fait h in DeSnyl have to believe whas he did to him was without his consent, without his knowledge. He had not hing to do with it. He was a prisoner of his bowly hich had no more energy, and she took advantage of him.

Still, I could nolonger stand by and watch. I 'd been in a position to prevent the demon from destroying Zse'oys, and I had failed. I could not fail this new test. I barked sharpper essively I growled, I snapped, and Denny suddenly awakened; his eyes popped open, and he saw the naked girl and heleapt away from her

"What the hell?" he shout ed.

I continued to bark. The demon was still in the room.

"Enzo!" he snapped. "That's enough!"

I st opped barking, but I kept my eye on her in case she were to assihim once again.

"Where are my pants?" Denny as ked frant ical styanding on the bed. "What were you doing?"

"I love you so much," she said.

"I'm married!"

"I ts' not like it 'having sex," she said.

And she crawl ed ont othe bed, reaching for him, so I barked again.

"Make t he dog go away" she said.

"Annika, st op!"

Denny grabbed her wrists; she squirmed pl ayful l y

"St op!" he shout ed, jumping offt he bed, grabbing his sweat pant s fron t he floorand pulling t hem on quickly

"I thought you liked me," Annika said, her mood abrupt ly dar kening

"Annika—"

"I thought yowanted me."

"Annika, put this on," he said, holding out her robe. "I tcatralk to a fift een-yearold nude woman. I s'not legal. Nu shouldn't be here. I 'll tak you home."

She cl ut ched t he r obe t o her s el f.

"But, Denny..."

"Annika, pl ease, put on the robe."

Denny tight ened the strings on his sweat pants.

"Annika, t his isn't happening right nowThis isn't something t hat happens. I don't know why you t hought—"

"You!" she wail ed and she start ed crying.of. If irt ed with me all wee You teased me. You kissed me." "I kissed you on the cheek," Denny said. "I thormal for relatives to kiss on the cheek. Ist called affect ion, not love."

"But I love you!" she howled, and then she was in an all-out crying her eyes squeezed shut, her mouth contorted. "I you!" she kept saying over and over. "I loveyou!"

Denny was trapped. He want ed to consol e hont whenever he moved closershe dropped her hands, which were clutching the crumpled robe ther chest, and suddenly her massive breasts, heaving with grief, were exposed to him and he had to retreat. This happened several times, like funny toy a monkey with cymbals or something. He approached to comfoher, she dropped her hands, her breasts shot out at him, and he flew bac I ts'possible I was witnessing a living interpretation of an antique pornographic penny bank, similar to one I saw in a movie cal Thed Stunt Man, which depicted a bear copulating with a girl on a swing.

Final l,yDenny had to put a stop to it.

"I'm going to leave the room," he said.of Wwill put on the robe and make yourself decent When you're ready come into the living room, and we can discuss it further

And he turned around and marched away followed and then we wait ed. And we wait ed.

Finally she came out wearing the robe, her eyes swoll en with tears didn't say a word, but she went straight to the bathroom. A few momer latershe emerged wearing her clothes.

"I 'l l t ake you home," Denny said.

"I call ed my fat hërAnnika said, "fr om t he bedr oom."

Denny froze. I suddenly sensed apprehension in the room.

"What did you tell him?" he asked.

She looked at him for a long time before she answered. I f her intent was to make him anxious, it worked.

"I told him to come pick me up," she said. "The bed is too uncomfort abl e her e."

"Good," Denny sighed. "Good t hinking."

She didn't respond, but continued to stare at him.

"If I gave you the wrong impression, I'm s'o Deynny said, looking away. "You're a very attractive woman, but I'm married and you're so young. This isn't a viable..."

He trail ed df Words not spoken.

"Affair," she said, fir ml.y

"Sit uat ion," he whis per ed.

She picked up her handbag and her dufel and walked to the foyeWe could all see the headlights when they appeared in front of the house. Annika threw open the door and jogged down the walk to the street. De and I watched from the door way as she tossed her bags in the back of the Mercedes, climbed into the front seat. Her fatiheris pajamas, waved and then drove away

That year we had a cold spell in each winter month, and when the first warm day of spring finally arrived in April, the trees and flowers and grasses burst to life with such intensity that the television news had proclaim an allgy emergency. The drugstores literally ran out of antihist amines. The pharmaceutical companies—those who profit from misery of others—could have asked for no greater income-generating scenariothan a cold, wet winter full of flushots and NyQuil, followed hot spring and record-breaking pollen counts. (I believe that people w not so allgic to their environment until they began polluting themsel and their world with so many drugs and toxins. But then, nobody asked me.) So while the rest of the world was focused oninhenvenience of hay fever, the people in my world had other things to do: Eve continued with the inexorable process of dying, Zoë spent too much time with her grandparents, and Denny and I worked at slowing the beating of our he so we wouldn't feel so much pain.

Still, Denny allowed for an occasional diversion, and that April, or presented it self. He had got ten a jobeoffrom one of the racing schools h worked for: they had been hired to provide race car drivers for a televis commercial, and they asked Denny to be one of the drivers. The racecoul was in California, a place called Thunderhill Raceway Park. I knew it happening in April because Denny talked about it quite a bit; he was ver

excit ed. But I had no idea t hat he pl anned t o drive hims el f t her e, a t entrip. And I had even l ess of an idea t hat he pl anned on t aking me wit h h

Oh, the joy! Denny and me and our BMWdriving all day and into the evening like a couple of bandit os running from the law part ners in crime. It had to be a crime to lead such a life as we led, a life in which could escape onest roubles by racing cars!

The drive down wasn't very special: the middle of Oregon is not note for its scenic beaut, y hough other parts of Oregon are. And the mount air passes in northern California were still somewhat swhich made me cringe with the memory of annika and how she had taken advantage of Denny. Luckily the snow of the Siskiyous was confined to the shoulders the highway and the road surface was barand wet. And then we fell out a the sky and into the verdant fields north of Sacramento.

St unning. Absol ut el y st unning, the vast ness of a world so int ense growth and birth, in the season of life bet ween the dormant winter and baking heat of summer Vast, rolling hills covered with newly sprung grand great swaths of wildflowers. Men working the land in their tracto churning the soil, releasing a heady brew of smells: moist ure and, decay fertilizer and diesel fumes. In Seattle welive among the trees and the waterways, and we feel we are rocked gently in the cradle of life. Our winters are not cold and our summers are not hot and we congratulate ourselves for choosing such a spectacular place to rest our heads and rour chickens. But around the Thunderhill Raceway Park, springing. There is no better evidence of the season.

And the track. Rel at ively newell cared forchall enging with twists and elevation changes and so much to look at. The morning after we arrived, Denny took me jogging. Wojogged the entire track. He was doing it to familiarize himself with the surface Yan't really see a track from inside a race car traveling at one hundred fifty miles per hour or more, said. You have to get out and eleelit.

Denny explained to me what he was looking for sumps in the pavement that might upset one uspension. Visible seams that he might use as braking zone markers or turn-in points. He touched the pavement

the apex of the turns and felt the condition of the asphalt—were the sist onesworn smooth? Could he find better gripslightflyhofestablished racing line? And there were tricks to the camber of certain turns, plac where the track appeared level from inside a car but were actually graever so slightly—usually by design to allow rainwater to trhuntofack and not puddle dangerously

Aft er we had travel ed the entire track and studied all three miles fift een turns, we returned to the paddocko Tage semi trucks had arrived. Several men in racing-crew uniforms erected tents and canopie and laid out an elaborate food service, while other men unloaded six beautifully identical Aston Martin DB5 automobiles, the kind made falby James Bond. Denny introduced himself to a man who carried a clipbo and walked with the gait of someone in char. His name was Ken.

"Thanks for your dedicat ion," Ken said, "but you'r e ear'l y

"I want ed t o wal k t he t r ack," Denny expl ained.

"Feel free."

"I al ready did, t hanks."

Ken nodded and looked at his wat ch.

"I ts't oo early for race engines," he said, "but you can take your streexhaust out if you want. Just keep it sane."

"Thanks," Denny said, and he looked at me and winked.

We went over to a crew truck, and Denny caught the arm of a crew member.

"I 'm Denny" he said. "One of t he drivers."

The man shook his hand and introduced himsel f as Pat.

"You've got time," he said. "Coffee is over there."

"I'm going to take my Bimmer out for a few easy laps. Ken said it vokay. I was wondering if you had a tie-down I could bor." ow

"What do you need a tie-down for?" Pat asked.

Denny gl anced at me quickl, yand Pat l aughed.

"Hey, J im," he called to another man. "This guy wants to borrow a down so he can take his dog for a joy ride."

They bot h l aughed, and I was a little confused.

"I have something bet t'et he J im guy said. He went around to the ca of the truck and returned a minutelater with a bedsheet.

"Here," he said. "I can al ways wash it at the hotel if he shits himse

Denny told me to get in the front seat of his car and sit, which I did They wrapped the sheet over me, pressing me to the seat, leaving only head sticking out. They somehow secured the sheet tightly from behind

"Too t ight?" Denny as ked.

I was too excited to repHy was going to take me out in his car!

"Take it easy on him until you see if he has a st omach for it," Pat sai "Not hing worse t han cleaning dog puke out of your vents."

"You've done t his befor e?"

"Oh, yeah," he said. "My dog used to l ove it."

Denny wal ked around to the driverside. He took hishel met out of the backs eat and squeezed it onto his head. He got in the car and put on his ϵ belt.

"One bark means slowert wo means fast ergot it?"

I barked t wice, and t hat surprised him and Pat and J im, who were b l eaning in the passenger window

"He want s t o go fast er al ready im said. "You've got your sel f a good dog t here."

The paddock at Thunder hill Raceway Park is tucked bet ween twolo parallel straights; the rest of the course fans out from the paddock ar butterfly wings. We cruised very slowly through the hot pit area and to track entrance.

"We're going to take it eas'y Denny said, and off we went.

Being on a track was a new experience for me. No buil dings, no signs no sense of proport ion. It was like running through a field, gliding ove plain. Denny shift ed smoot hlbut I not iced he drove more aggressively than he did on the street. He revved the car much highed his braking was much harder

"I'm finding my visual s," he expl ained to me.uffh-in point s, braking. Some guys drive more by feel. They get in a rhythm and trust it. But I very visual. It makes me feel comfortable to have references. I alread dozens of reference points on this track even though I've never driven i seven or eight specific things I've not ed on each turn from our track w

Ar ound the turns we went. He noted his apexes and exits for my ben Down the straights we picked up speed.eWeren't going very fast, maybe sixtybut I really felt the speed around the turns when the tires made hollowghostly sound, almost like an owl. I felt special, being with D on the racetrack. He had never taken me on a track before. I felt sure a relaxed; being held firmly to the seat was comforting. The windows we open, and the wind was fresh and cold. I could have driven like that all

Aft er three laps he looked over at me.

"Brakes are warm," he said. "Tes are warm."

I didn't under st and what he was get ting at.

"You want to try a hot lap?"

A hot lap? I barked twice. Then I barked twice again. Denny laughe

"Sing out if you don't like it, he said, "one long howl." He firmly pressed the accelerator to the floor

There is not hing like it. The sensation of speed. Not hing in the worl can compare.

It was the sudden acceleration, not sliberds heet, that kept me pinned to the seat as we gathered speed and flew down the first straight.

"Hold on, now" Denny said, "we're taking this at speed."

Fast, we went, hurt ling, fastlerwat chedt he turn approach, scream at unt il we were practical ly past it and then he wfatshefaccel er at or and har on the brakes. The nose of the car dove and then I was thankful for the because wit hout it I would have been thrown against the windshield. S slowslow the brake pads held the rotors as tightly as they could, bur from the friction, the heat being throwfitdfe calipers, the energy dissipating. And then he cranked the wheel left and so smoothly but wi pause he was back on the gas and we were pushing through the turn, the for ces shoving us toward the outside of the car but the tires holding us pl ace, t hey were not hooting, t hose tires, no. The owl was dead. The tir wer e s cr eeching, t hey wer e shout ing, howl ing, cr ying in paihhhhh! He rel axed on the wheel at the apex and the car drift ed toward the exit and was full on the gas and we flew !-out of that turn and toward the next and the next after that. Fifteen turns at Thunderhill. Fifteen. An them all equal. It ador ethem all. Each one isfeirent, each with its own particular sensation, but each so magnifice Art bund the track we went, fast er and fast er ap aft er lap.

"You okay?" he asked, I ooking over at me as we sped near I y one hundred t went y mil es per hour down the back straight.

I barked twice.

"I'm gonna use up my tires if you keep me out here," he said. "One more lap."

Yes, one more lap. One more lap. For eyene more lap. I live my life for one more lap. *bi ve*my life for one more lap! Please, God, please give me *one more lap*!

And that lap was spect acularlifted my eyes as Deningstructed. "Big eyes, far eyes," he said to me. Those reference points, the visuals he had identified when we walked the track, moved by so quickly it took me so time to realize that he was not even seeing them. He was not hem? He had programmed the map of the racecourse into his brain and it was the like a GPS navigational system; when we slowed for a turn, his head wa and looking atthe next turn, not at the apex of the turn we were driving. The turn we were in was simply a state of existence for Dehnywas wher we were, and he was happy to be there, and I could feel the joy emanating from him, the love of life. But his attention—and him nit on—was far ahead, to the next turn and the one beyond that the weery breath he adjusted, he reassessed, he corrected, but he did it all subconsciously; then, how in a race he could plot now to pass another driver three or follows late that day

Aft er a cool -down l ap, we pul l ed int o t he paddock and t he ent ir e cr was wait ing. They surrounded t he car and t heir hands r el eas ed me from har ness and I l eapt t o t he t ar mac.

"Did you like it?" one of them as ked me and I barked;s\[Y\]I barked and jumped high in the air

"You were haul ing ass out there," Pat said to Deniwe've got a real racer on the set."

"Well, Enzo barked twice," Denny explained with a laughwoIbarks means faster!"

They I aughed, and I barked t wice again. Faster! The feeling. The sensation. The movement. The speed. The caïfhe tires. The sound. The

wind. The track surface. The apex. The exitthe shift point. The braking zone. The ride. I s'all about the ride!

There is not hing more to tell about that trip because not hing could possibly be more incredible than those few hot laps that Denny gave to Until that momentthought that I loved racing. I intellectualized that would enjoy being in a race carUntil that moment I didnhow. How could anyone know until he sits in a car at race speed and takes turns a limits of adhesion, brakes a hair from lockup, the engine begging for the redline?

I floated through the rest of our trip. I dreamed of going out again speed, but I suspected—as it turned out, correctly so—that more traffor me was unlikel. Still. I had my memony experience I could relive in my mind again and again. Two barks means fast eSometimes, to this day, in my sleep I bark twice because I am dreaming of Denny driving maround Thunderhill, the two of us laying down a hot lap, and I bark tw say fast erOne more lap, Denny! Faster!

Six mont hs came and six mont hs left and Eve was still alive. Then seve mont hs. Then eight. On the first of Mayenny and I were invited to the Twins' for dinner which was unusual because it was a Monday night, and never went with Denny on a weeknight visit. We tood awkwardly in the living room with the empty hospital bed whilt is It and Maxwell prepared dinner. Eve was absent.

I wander ed down the hall way to investigate, and I found Zoë playin quietly by herself in her room. Her room in Maxwell and he house was much larger than her room at home, and it was filled with all the thing little girl could want: dolls and toys and frilly bed skirts and clouds on the ceiling. She was immersed in her dollhouse and didnot ice me enter

I spotted a sock ball on the flwbich must have fallen when the clear clothes were being loaded into her dresand I pounced on it. I playfull dropped it at Zoë' feet, nudged it with my nose, and then dropped down t my elbows, leaving my haunches tall and my tail upright: universal siglanguage for "Les'play!" But she ignored me.

So I tried again. I snat ched up the socks, flung them in the batatied them with my snout, retrieved them for myself, and dropped them again

Zoë's feet, and downwardly I faced. I was all prepared for a fun game (Enno-F et ch. She wasnt'. She pushed the socks aside with her foot.

I barked expect ant, logne last at tempt. She turned and looked at me serious l.y

"That's a baby game," she said. "I have to be a grown-up now

My little Zoë, a grown-up at her tender agea At hought.

Disappoint ed, I wal ked slowl y to the door and looked back at her c my shoul der

"Somet imes bad t hings happen," she said t o her sel f. "Somet imes t hi change, and we have t o change, t oo."

She was speaking someone else'words, and I 'm not sure she believe them or even understood them. Perhaps she was committing them to memory because she hoped they would hold the key to her uncertain fut

I returned to the living room and waited with Denny until, finally emerged from the hall way where the breakm and bathrooms were. The nurse who spent her breaks obsessively knitting with metal needles the drove me mad with their scraping and scratching was helping Eve walk. And Eve was brilliant. She was wearing a goous dress, long and navy blue and cut just so. She wore the lovely string of small freshwater p from Japan that Denny had given her for their fifth anniver sardyher makeup and her hair, which had grown enough so she could arrange it into some kind of a hairdo, was done that waynd she was beaming. Even though she needed help for her runway walk, she was walking the runwand Denny gave her a standing ovation.

"Today is the first day I am not dead," Eve said to us. "And we're having a party"

To live every day as if it had been stol en from death, that is how I τ like to live. The feel the joy of life, as Eve felt the joy of lifes That e oneself from the burden, the angst, the anguish that we all encounter ε

day. To say I am al ive, I am wonder ful, I am. I am. That is something as piretoWhen I am a person, that is how I will live my life.

The part y was fest ive. Ever yone was happend those who were not happy pretended that they were with such conviction that we all were convinced. Even Zoë came alive with her usual humompparently forgetting for a time her need to be a grown-up. When the hour came for to leave, Denny kissed Eve deeply

- "I love you so much," he said. "I wish you could come home."
- "I want to come home," she replied. *WILL* come home."

She was tired, so she sat on the sofa and called me to her; I let her my ears. Denny was helping Zoë get ready for her bedtime, while the Twins, for once, were keeping a respectful distance.

"I know Dennys dis appoint ed," she said to me. "They're al l dis appoint ed. E ver yone want s me to be the next Lance Armstrong. And could just grab it and hold it in front of me, maybe I could be. ButtI cahold it, Enzo. Istbigger than me. Ist ever ywhere."

In the other room we could hear Zoë playing in the bath, Denny laughing with heras if they had no worries in the world.

"I shoul d'n'have al lowed it to be this wayhe said regret ful. I'y shoul d have insisted on going home so we coul dal l be toget Theat's my fault; I coul d have been strongent Denny would say we cant' worry about what's already happened, so... Please take care of Denny and Zoë fc me, Enzo. They're so wonder ful when they're toget her

She shook her head to rid hersel f of her sad thoughts and looked do at me.

"Do you see?" she asked. "I'm not afraid of it anymore. I want ed yo with me before because I want ed you to protect me, but I'm not afraid anymore. Because its' not the end."

She I aughed the Evelaughthat I remembered.

"But you knew t hat," she said. "What know ever yt hing."

Not everything. But I knew she had been right abouts her ion: while doct or s are able to help many people, for, herey could only tell her who couldn't be done. And I knew that once they identified her disease for homoce everyone around her accepted her diagnosis and reinforced it and repeated it back to her time and again, there was no way she could stop The visible becomes inevitable. Of car goes where your eyes go.

We took our leave, Denny and I . I diths' leep in the car on the ride home as I usually did. I wat ched the bright lights of Bellevue and Me flicker by so beautiful. Crossing the lake on the floating bridge and see the glow of Madison Park and Leschi, the buildings of downtown peekin out from behind the Mount Baker ridge; the city sharp and crisp, all th and age hidden by the night.

If I ever find myself before a firing squad, I will face my execut or wit hout a blindfold, and I will think of Eve. Of what she said. It is no end.

She died that night. Her last breath took her soul, I saw it in my d saw her soul leave her body as she exhaled, and then she had no more needs, no more reason; she was released from her bodyd, being released, she continued her journey elsewhere, high in the firmament where soul material gathers and plays out all the dreams and joys of which we ter beings can barely conceive, all the things that are beyond our comprehension, but even so, are not beyond our attainment if we choose attain them, and believe that we truly can.

In the morning, Denny didth'know about Eve, and I, having awakened in a fog from my dream, barely suspected. He drove me over to Luther Burl Park on the eastern shore of Mercer I sland. Since it was a warm spring it was a good choice of dog parks, as it fatfreded lake access so Denny coulthrow the ball and I could swim after it. The park was empty of other we were by ourselves.

"We'll move her back home," Denny said to me as he threw the ball "And Zoë. We should all be toget her miss them."

I swam out into the cold lake and retrieved the ball.

"This week," he said. "This week I 'll bring bot h of t hem home."

And he threw the ball again. I waded over the rocky bottom until r body gained buoyancy and then I paddled out to the ball, bobbed for it it he lake, and returned. When I droppere ball at Dennsy'feet and looked up, I saw that he was on his cell phone. After a moment he nodded and hung up.

"She's gone," he said, and t hen he sobbed l oudl y and t ur ned away crying int o t he crook of his arm so I could dree.

I am not a dog who runs away from things. I had never run away from things and I have never run away since. But in that moment, I had to run.

There was something about it. I dook now The setting of the dog parl per ched on the eastern bank of Mercer I sland like that, so The dog parl rail fence, not a containment fence in any way he entire scene begs for a dog to run, to flee from his captiyit by lash out against the establishmer And so I ran.

Off to the south, I burst defwn the short path through the gap in the split rail and out onto the big field, then I broke west. Over the aspha and down the other side to the amphitheater I found what I was lookin untamed wilderness. I needed to go wilding. I was upset, sad, angry—something! I needed to do something! I needed to feel myself, underst myself and this horrible world we are all trapped in, where bugs and t and viruses worm their way into our brains and lay their putrid eggs that ch and eat us alive from the inside out. I needed to do my part to cr stamp out what was attacking me, my way of life. So I ran.

The twigs and vines whipped my face. The rough earth hurt my feet. But I ran until I saw what I needed to sequiArel. Fat and complacent. Eat ing from a bag of Frit os. St upidly shoving chips into it s mouth, and found in the darkest part of my soul a hat red I had never felt before.tI know where it came from but it was there and I gendat hat squirrel. It l ooked up t oo l at e. I t not iced me l ong aft er it shoul d have if it had wa live, and I was on it. I was on that squirrel and it had no chance. I was rut hl ess. My jaws sl apped down on it, cracking it s back, my t eet h rippe int o it s furand I shook it to death after that, for good measure, I shool unt il I heard it s neck snap in t wo. And t hen I at e it . I ripped it open v fangs, my incisors, tore into it, and blood was on me, all the blood, hot rich, I drank it s life and I at e it s ent rail s and pul verized it s bones and swallowed. I crushed it s skull and at e it s head. I devoured the squidr to do it. I missed Eve so much I could be a human anymore and feel the pain t hat humans feel . I had t o be an animal again. I devour ed, gedgdr gul ped, I did all the things I shotllhan'e done. My trying to live to human st andards had done not hing for Eve; I at ethe squirrel for Eve.

I slept in the bushes. Sometime later Igednenyself again. Denny found me and he said not hing. He led me to the car got in the backseat and fell as leep again immediatel With the taste of blood from the squir I had murdered fresh in my mouth, I slept. And while I slept I dream the crows.

I chased them; I caught them; I killed them. I did it for Eve.

For Eve, her death was the end of a painful battle. For Denny it was the beginning.

What I did in the park was sel fish because it was about satisfying r basest needs. It was also sel fish because it prevented Denny from goir Zoë right awayHe was angry with me for having del ayed him in the park But to post pone, even for a short time, what he was to find at the home the Twins might have been the most merciful thing I could have done fo him.

When I awoke from my slumbewe were at Maxwell andrīshs house. In the driveway was a windowless white van with a filedris insignia on the drivers door. Denny parked in such a way as to not block the vehicle, and then heled me around the side of the house to the hose in back. He turned on the hose and rinsed the blood from my muzzle in a rough and joyless manner; it was not a bath, it was a scrubbing.

"What did you get into out there?" he asked me.

When I was cleaned of dirt and blood, he released me and I shook myself dryHe went to the French doors on the patio and knocked. After moment, Trish appeared. She opened the door and embraced Dennyhe was crying.

Aft er a long time, during which Maxwell and Zoë also appeared, De ended the embrace and asked, "Where is she?"

Trish point ed. "We't old them to wait for you," she said.

Denny st epped int o t he house, t ouching Zøëhead as he passed. Aft er he disappeared, Trish looked at Maxwell.

"Let him have a minut e," she said.

And t hey wit h Zoë, st epped out side and closed the French door so t Denny could be alone with Eve for the last time, even though she was r longer living.

In the emptiness that was all around me, I noticed an old tennis be the plantings; I picked it up and dropped it at �Zfoæt. I didn'know what I was doing, if I had a specific intentiona�WI trying to light enthe mood don't know but I felt I had to do something. So there the ball bounced stop at her bare feet.

She I ooked down at the bal I but did not hing with it.

Maxwell not iced what I had done, and he not iced Zoëack of react ion He picked up the ball and, with a mightheave, threw it so far into the woods behind the house that I lost sight of it and could only barely he crash through the leaves of bushes on its way back to earth. It was quimpressive toss, the paletennis ball sailing through the air against the blue sky What amount of psychic pain was expended on that ball, I had idea.

"F et ch, boy" Maxwell said to me sar donical anyd t hen he t ur ned back to t he house.

I didn't fet ch, but wait ed wit h t hem unt il Denny r et ur ned. When he he went to Zoë immediat el picked her up, and hel d her t ight. IS he s queezed his neck.

"I'm so sad," he said.

"Me, too."

He sat on one of the teak deck chairs with Zoë on his knee. She buried her face in his shoul der and stayed like that.

"The people from Bonney-Wat son will take her now Trish said. "We'll bury her with our family ts' what she want ed."

"I know" he said, nodding. "When?"

"Before the end of the week."

"What can I do?"

Trish looked at Maxwell.

"We'll take care of the arrangements," Maxwell said. "But we did v to speak with you about something."

Denny wait ed for Maxwell to continue, but he didn'

"You haven't eat en breakfast, Zoë,"rTsh said. "Come with me and I'l fix you an egg."

Zoë didn't budge unt il Denny tapped her shoul der and nudged her off his lap.

"Go get some food wit h Grandma," he said.

Zoë obedient l y fol l owedrTs h int o t he house.

When she was gone, Denny l eaned back with his eyes closed and sigh heavily his face lifted to the skyle stayed like that for a long time. Minutes. He was a statue. While Denny was immobile, Maxwell shifted weight from one foot to the other and back. Several times Maxwell beg speaking but stopped himself. He seemed somehow reluctant.

"I knew it was coming," Denny said, final, lhy's eyes still closed. "Bu still...I'm surprised."

Maxwel l nodded to himsel f.

"That's what concerns flish and me," he said.

Denny opened his eyes and looked at Maxwell.

"Concer ns you?" he as ked, t aken aback.

"That you haven't made preparations."

"Pr epar at ions?"

"You have no pl an."

"Pl an?"

"You keep repeat ing the last thing I 've said," Maxwell observed af pause.

"Because I dont' under st and what you're t al king about," Denny said.

"That's what concerns us."

Denny, still sitting, leaned for ward and screwed up his face at Max^{\cdot}

"What exact l y are you concer ned about, Maxwell?" he as ked.

Then Trish was there.

"Zoë is eat ing an egg and toast, and wat ching TV in the kit chen," she announced. She looked at Maxwell expect antly

"We've just started," Maxwell said.

"Oh," Trish said, "I thought ... What have you said so far?"

"Why don't you take it from the top; ish," Denny said. "Maxwell is having some difficulty with the opening. Ou'r e concerned..."

Trish glanced around, apparent ly disappoint ed that their concernst lal ready been resol ved.

"Well," she began, "Eve' passing is obviously a terrible tragedyll, we've been anticipating it for many months. Maxwell and I have discus at great length our lives—the lived boff us—in the aftermath of Eve' death. We discussed it with Eve, as well, just so you know we believe that the best situation for all parties involved would be for us to have cust ody of Zoë, to raise her in a warm and stable family situation, to provide her with the kind of upbringing and, well, not to be gauche, but privilegeneral end that this is in no way a commentary on you as a person or you fathering abilities. It is simply what is ins Zoeë't interest."

Denny looked from one of them to the otherper plexed look still on his face, but he said nothing.

I was perplexed, too. It was my understanding that Denny had all Eve to live with the Mins so they could spend time with their dying daughter, and that he had allowed Zoë to live with their so she could spend time with her dying mothe I understood it, once Eve died, Zoë would be with us. The idea of a transition period made some sense to me Eve had died the previous night; to spend the following day—or even fe days—with her grandparents made sense. But, cust ody?

"What do you t hink?" Tish as ked.

"You can't have cust ody of Zoë," Denny said simply

Maxwell sucked in his cheeks, crossed his arms, and tapped his finge against his biceps, which were clad in a dark polyester knit.

"I know this is hard for you," is h said. "But you have to agree that v have the advant ages of parent al experience, avail able free time, and fisc abundance that will ensure Zoëducation through what ever level she might choose to pursue, and a lærhome in a safe neighborhood that has many young families and many children her age."

Denny thought for a moment.

"You can't have cust ody of Zoë," he said.

"I told you," Maxwell said Trosh.

"I f you could just sleep on it r'issh said to Denny's 'm sure you will see that what we're doing is rights best for all. You can pursue your racing career Zoë can grow up in a loving and support ive environment sl what Eve want ed."

"How do you know t hat?" Denny as ked quickl. #She t ol d you?"

"She did."

"But she didn't tell me."

"I don't know why she woul drt' have," Trish said.

"She didn't," Denny said fir ml.y

Trish for ced a smil e.

"Will you sleep on it?" she asked. "IM" you think about what we've said? It will be much easier

"No, I will not sleep on it," Denny said, rising from the **chain** can't have cust ody of my daught eF inal answer"

The Twins sighed simul taneous. It is has shook her head in dismay Maxwell reached into his back pocket and removed a business envelope.

"We didn't want it to have to be this ways said, and he handed the envel ope to Denny

"What 's t his?" Denny as ked.

"Open it," Maxwell said.

Denny opened the envel ope and removed several sheets of paper glanced at them briefly

"What does this mean?" he asked again.

"I don't know if you have a lawyer" Maxwell said. "But if you don," you should get one. We're suing for cust ody of our granddaught"er

Denny fl inched l ike he had been punched in t he gut. Hæll back int o t he deck chair, his hands still clinging to t he documents.

"I finished my egg," Zoë announced.

None of us had not iced her return, but there she was. She climbed on Denny's lap.

"Ar e*you* hungr y?" she as ked. "Gr andma can make you an egg, t oo."

"No," he said apol oget ical l y I 'm not hungr.'y

She thought a moment. "Are you still sad?" she asked.

"Yes," he said aft er a pause. "I'm still very sad."

"Me, too," she agreed, and she laid her head on his chest.

Denny looked at the Wins. Maxwel ls' long arm hung on Tish's narrow shoul ders like some kind of heavy chain. And then I saw something chain Denny. I saw his face tight en with resolve.

"Zoë," he said, st anding her up. "Yu run inside and pack your things, okay?"

"Where are we going?" she asked.

"We'r e going home now."

Zoë smil ed and start edfobut Maxwell stepped for ward.

"Zoë, st op right there," he said. "Daddy has some errands he has to You'll stay with us for now

"How dar e you!" Denny said. "Who do you t hink you ar e?"

"I 'm t he one who's been raising her for the past eight months," Maxwell said, his jaw set.

Zoë looked from her fat her to her grandfat Sene didn't know what to do. No one knew what to do. I t was a standofind then Trish stepped in.

"Run inside and put your dolls toget, he said to Zoë, "while we talk alittle more."

Zoë r el uct ant l y wit hdr. ew

"Let her stay with us, DennyTrish pleaded. "We can work this out. I know we can work it out. Let her stay with us while the lawyers come with some kind of compromise. You were fine with her staying here before."

"You begged me to let her stay here," Denny said to her

"I 'm sur e we can work this out."

"No, Trish," he said. "I'm taking her home with me."

"And who's going to take care of her when you're at work?" Maxwel snapped, shaking with anger "When you're off at your races for days at a time? Who will take care of her if, God for bid, she were to get sick? Or would you just ignore it, hide it from the doctors until she was on ghe of death, like you did with Eve?"

"I didn't hide Eve from the doct or s."

"And yet she never saw anyone—"

"She refused!" Denny cried out . "She refused to see anyone!"

"You coul d have for ced her" Maxwel l shout ed.

"No one coul d for ce E ve to do anyt hing E ve didnwant to do," Denny said. "I cer t ainly coul dn."

Maxwel l cl enched his fists tightline tendons in his neck bul ged.

"And t hat's why she's dead," he said.

"What?" Denny as ked incredul ous I 'This is a joke! I 'm not continuir this conversation."

He gl ar ed at Maxwell and start ed toward the house.

"I regret the day she met you," Maxwell muttered after him.

Denny st opped at the door and call ed inside.

"Zoë, l ets' go now. We can st op by l at er t o get your dolls."

Zoë emerged looking confused, holding an armful of s fed animal s.

"Can I take these?" she asked.

"Yes, honey. But let'go now. We'll come back later for the rest."

Denny us her ed her toward the path that led around to the front of house.

"You're going to regret this," Maxwell hissed at Denny as he passe "You have no idea what you're getting yourself into."

"Let's go, Enzo," Denny said.

We walked around to the driveway and got into our. Maxwell followed us and watched Denny strap Zoë into her car seat. Denny star the engine.

"You're going to regret this," Maxwell said again. "Mark my words

Denny pulled the driver-side door closed with a slam that shook th car.

"Do I have a lawyer?" he said to himsel f. "I work amble prestigious BMW and Mercedes service center in Seattle. Who does he think he's dealing with? I have a good relationship with all the best lain this town And I have their home phone numbers."

We pulled out of the driveway with a spray of gravel at Maxswædelt', and as we took of up the idyllic, twisty Mercer I slandroad, I dohedp' but notice that the white van was gone. And with it, Eve.

With experience, a driver adjusts his understanding of how a car feels with it is near its limits driver becomes comfortable driving on the edge, so when his tires begin to lose adhesion, he can easily correct, pause, and recover. Knowing where and when he can push for a little extra becomes ingrained in his being.

When the pressure is intense and the race is only half completed, a driver who is being chased relentlessly by a competitor realizes that I might be better boushing from behind than pulling from the front. In t case, the smart move is to yield his lead to the trailing car and let the driver pass. Relieved of his burden, our driver can tuck in behind and mathe new leader drive his mirrors.

Sometimes, howeverit is important to hold on postion and not allow the pass. For strategic reasons, psychological reasons. Sometime driver simply has to prove that he is better than his competition.

Racing is about discipl ine and intelligence, not about who has the heavier foot. The one who drives smart will always win in the end.

Zoë insist ed on going to school the next dayd when Denny said he would pick her up at dismissal time, she complained that she want ed to with her friends in the aft-erhool program. Denny reluct antly agreed.

"I'll pick you up a little earlier than I usually do," he said when v dropped her of. He must have been afraid that the wins would try to stea her away.

From Zoës school, we drove up Union to Fift eent heaue and found a parking spot directly across from to a Cobe. Denny tied my leash to a bicycle stand and went inside; he returned a few minutes later wifee cof and a scone. He untied me and told me to sit under neath an outdoor table which I did. A quarter of an hour later were joined by someone else. A lage but compact man compose of circles: round head, round torso, round highs, round hands. There was no hair on the top of his head, but a lot a the sides. He was wearing very wide jeans and a gargray sweat shirt with a giant purple W on it.

"Good morning, Dennis," the man said. "Please accept my sincer e condol ences for your devast at ingloss."

He l eaned down and for ceful l y embraced Dennyho sat awkwardl, y hands in his lap, looking out to the street.

"I —" Denny started, then stopped himself as the man released him stood upright. "Of course," Denny said uncomfortably

The man nodded slight lygnoring Denny's confused replyand then wedged himself bet ween the metal arms of the other sidewalk chair by table; he was not fat, and in fact, he might have been considered muscul in some circles, yet he was very gar

"Good-looking dog," he said. "He has some terrier in him?"

I lift ed my head. Me?

"I don't know exact l," Denny said. "Probabl ","

"Good-l ooking animal," the man mused.

I was impressed that he not iced me at all.

"Oh, she pulls a good latte," the man said, slurping hfæcdfink.

"Who?" Denny as ked.

"My l it t l e bar is t a in t her e. The one wit h t he pl ump l ips, t he pier ce eyebr ow, and t he dar k chocol at e eyes..."

"I didn't not ice."

"You've got a lot on your mind;"he man said. "This consult at ion wil cost you an oil change. My gull-wing is very thir Atryoil change, whether or not you decide to retain me."

"Fine."

"Let me see the paper work."

Denny handed him t he envel ope Maxwel l had given him. The man t oo it and removed t he papers.

"They said Eve t ol d t hem she want ed Zoë t o be raised by t hem."

"I don't care about that," the man said.

"Somet imes she was on so many drugs, she would have said anyt hing Denny said desper at el yShe may have said it, but she couldn'have meant it."

"I don't care what anyone said or why they said it," the man said sharply "Chil dren are not chattel. They cannot be given away or traded the market place. Everything that happens will be done in the best intethe child."

"That's what they said," Denny said. "Zoë'best interest."

"They're educated," the man said. "Still, the motsheimal wishes are irrelevant. How long were you married?"

```
"Six years."

"Any ot her chil dren?"

"No."

"Any secrets?"
```

The man drank his latte and leafed through the papers. He was a cur man, full of twit ches and extra movements. It took messeveral minut ereal ize that when he touched his hand to his hip pocket, which he did frequently, it was because he had some kind of buzzing device hidden away and by touching it he couldstop its buzzing. This mant tention was in many places at once. And yet, when he locked eyes with Depthy could sense the total ity of his focus. Denny could, too, I, kneewuse in those moments, Denny's tensions lackened perceptibly

"Ar e you in a drug treat ment program?" the man asked.

"No."

"Ar e you a regist er ed s ex fænder?"

"No."

"Have you ever been convict ed of a fel ony? Spent any time in jail?"

"No."

The man st ufed t he paper s back in t he envel ope.

"This is not hing," he said. "Where is your daught er now?"

"She want ed to go to school. Shoul d I have kept her home?"

"No, t hats' good. You're being responsive to her needs. That' import ant. List en, t his is not something you should be overly concerne with. I'll demand a summary judgment. I toame' why we won't get it. The child will be yours free and cl.ear

Denny brist l ed.

"By 't he chil d' you mean my daught eZoë?"

"Yes," the man said, sizing up Denny"I mean your daught eZoë. This is Washingt on State, for Christake! Unless you're cooking met hin you kit chen, the child is all ways awarded to the biological parent. No quest

"Okay," Denny said.

"Don't panic. Don't get mad. Be polite. Call them and give them my information. The them all correspondence has to be directed to me as y attorney! 'll call their lawyers and let them know the big dog is in yo corner My feeling is they're looking for a soft spot; they're hoping you go away quietly Grandparents are like that. Grandparents are convinced they're better parents than their own kids, whose lives they've alread fucked up. The problem is, grandparents are pains in the ass because the have money. Do they have money?"

"Pl ent y"

"And you?"

"Oil changes for life," Denny said with a forced smile.

"Oil changes aint going to cut it, Dennis. My rate is foifit y an hour I need a twent y-five-hundred-doll ar retained you have it?"

"I 'll get it," Denny said.

"When? Today? This week? Next week?"

Denny looked at him har d.

"This is my daught erMark. I promise on my soul yought every doll ar you have coming to you. She'my daught erHer name is Zoë. And I would appreciate it if you would use her name, or at least a gentlerect pronoun, when you refer to he'r

Mark sucked in his cheeks and nodded.

"I totally understand, Dennis. Slywur daught erand her name is Zoë. And I understand that you're a friend and I trust you. I apol ogize for questioning. Sometimes I get people..." He paused. "Me to you, Dennis We're talking about seven or eight grand to make this thing go.a Youy can do that, right? Of course you can. I waive my retainer for you, my friend." He stood up and the chair almost stood with him, but he shucke himself out of it before it embarrassed him in front of total a crowd. "This is a totally bogus cust ody suit. It care imagine why they would bother to file it. Call the in-laws—and tell them everything goes through me. I 'll have the paralegal on this torday paralegal. I really have a problem with my pronouns, do not his torday paralegal. I really have a problem with my pronouns, do not his torday paralegal. I are they did not here to sucker and you aren't a sucker are you, champ?"

He cuffed Denny on the chin.

"Be cool with them," Mark said. "Dotn'get angr.yBe cool, and ever yt hing is in little Zobest interest, got it? Al ways say ever yt hing

for her Got it?"

"Got it," Denny said.

The man paused sol emnl.y

"How are you hol ding up, friend?"

"I 'm fine," Denny said.

"Taking time of? A head-clearing walk with...What his name?"

"E nzo."

"Good name. Good-l ooking dog."

"He's upset," Denny said." I 'm taking him to work with me todby don't feel comfort able leaving him home alone."

"Maybe you should take some time for Mark said. "Your wife just passed away Plus this nonsense. Craig will give you some timbeantd if he doesn't, I 'll call him and rattle his cage with the threat of a work har assment suit."

"Thanks, Mark," Denny said. "But I can't ay home right now t reminds me too much—"

"Ah."

"I need to work. I need to do somet hing. Keep moving."

"Under stood," Mark said. "Say no more."

He gat her ed his bag.

"I have to admit," he said, "wat ching you win that race on TV was pretty sweet. Where was that? Last year?"

"Wat kins Gl en," Denny said.

"Yeah. Wat kins Gl en. That was sweet. The wife had some people ove and I was bar becuing and I turned on the little TV in the kit chen and t guys were wat ching...sweet."

Denny smil ed, but it was wit hout convict ion.

"You're a good man, Dennis," Mark said. "I'll take care of this. Of a the things you have to worry about, this is not of them. You let me worry about this partout take care of your daught pokay?"

"Thanks."

Mark trundled **6** flown the street, and when he had rounded the corn Denny looked at me and held his hands out in front of himself. They wer shaking. He didn't say anything, but he looked at his hands trembling an then he looked at me, and I knew what he was thinking. He was thinking that if he just had a steering wheel to hold on to, his hands would hake. If he had a steering wheel to hold on to, everything would be all right

I spent most of the day hanging out in the garage with the guys who fix cars because the owners of the shop didn't ike it when I was in the lobby where the cust omers could see me.

I knew all the guys in the garage. I didnot to work very often, but I been there enough that they all knew me and gave me a hard time by doithings like throwing wrenches across the shop and trying to get me to them, and when I refused, they'd laugh and comment on how smart I we There was one tech guy in particul, Frenn, who was really nice, and every time he walked by me he would ask: "Are you done yet?" At first I had idea what he was talking about, but I finally figured out the to have shop's owners, Craig, spent most of his time asking if the techs were finished with their cars, and Fenn was just passing it on down the line to only one who ranked below him. Me.

"Ar e you done yet?"

I felt strangel y anxious that iday very human way. People are al ways worried about what happening next. They often find it difficult to stand still, to occupy the now without worrying about the future. Peop not generally satisfied with what they have; they are very concerned w what they are going to have. A dog can almost power down his psyche and slow his anticipatory met abolism, like David Blaine at tempting to set

record for holding his breath at the bottom of a swimming pool—the tof the world around him simply changes. On a normal dog, daycan sit stifor hours on end with no fort. But that day I was anxious. I was nervo and worried, uneasy and distracted. I paced around and never felt settl didn't care for the sensation, yet I realized it was possibly a natural progression of my evolving soul, and therefore I tried my best to embassion.

One of the garage bays was open, and a sticky drizzle fogged the air Skip, the big funny man with the long beard, dutifully washed the cars twere ready for pickup, even though it was raining.

"Rain isn't dirt, ydi rtis dirt y" he repeat ed to himsel f, a Seattle-car washing mant ra. He squeezed his clump of sponge, and soapy wat er rush like a river down the windshield on immacul at ely cared-for British rac green BMW 2002. I la head bet ween my forelegs, just inside the thresh of the garage, wat ching him work.

The day seemed like it would never end, until the Seattle police car showed up and two policemen got out.

"Can I offer you gent lemen a was h?" Skip call ed to them.

The men seemed confused by the question. They exchanged a glance.

"I ts'r aining," one of t hem said.

"Rain isn't dirt," Skip said cheer ful l. "Di rtis dirt "y"

The policemen looked at him strangehy if they didn't know if he was mocking them.

"No, t hanks," one of t hem said as t hey wal ked to t he l obby door and went inside.

I nosed through the swinging door in the garage bay and into the fil room. I wandered up behind the count which Mike was at tending.

"Aft er noon, officer s," I hear d Mike sayA probl em wit h your car?"

"Ar e you Dennis Swift?" one of t hem as ked.

"I am not," Mike replied.

"I s he her e?"

Mike hesit at ed. I could smell his sudden tension.

"He may have left for the dayMike said. "Let me check. Can I tell him who's calling?"

"We have a warrant for his arrest," one of the policemen said.

"I'll see if bæstill in the back."

Mike t ur ned and st umbl ed int o me.

"Enzo. Cl ear out, boy

He looked up at the police ner vous ly

"Shop dog," he said. "Al ways in the way"

I followed him into the back, where Denny was at the complite ging invoices for the people who wanted their cars by the end of the day

"Den," Mike said. "There are a couple of cops out front with a warra

"F or?" Denny as ked, not even looking up from the screen, tap-tap-tapping away at his invoices.

"You. For your arrest."

Denny st opped what he was doing.

"F or what?" he as ked.

"I didn't get the details. But they're uniform SPD and they doordklike malestrippers and today is nour birthday anyway o I don't hink

it's a prank."

Denny stood up and started for the lobby

"I told them you might have left for the day ke said, indicating the back door with his chin.

"I appreciate the thought, Mike. But if they've got a warrant, they probably know where I live. Let me find out what this is all about."

Like a train, the three of us snaked through the fileroom and up to counter

"I'm Denny Swift."

The pol ice nodded.

"Coul d you st ep out from behind t he countseir?" one of t hem as ked.

"I s there a problem? Can you tell me what this is all about?"

There were half a dozen people sitting in the lobby waiting for their invoices to be prepared; they all looked up from their reading material

"Pl ease st ep out fr om behind t he count erhe pol iceman said.

Denny hesit at ed for a moment, and then followed his instructions.

"We have a warrant for your arrest," one of the men said.

"For what?" Denny asked. "Can I see it? There must be some mist a

The cop handed Denny a sheaf of paper. Denny r ead it .

"You'r e joking," he said.

"No, sir," the cop said, taking back the papers. "Pl ease place your har on the counter and spread your legs."

Denny's boss, Craig, came out of the back.

"Officers?" he said, approaching them. "I donbel ieve this is necessary and if it is, you can do it out side."

"Sir, hold!" the policeman said stern by inting a long finger at Craig.

But Craig was right. The whole thing was designed to be prejudicial was the lobby of a place of busines Beople were there, waiting for their BMWs and Mercedes gull-wings and other fancy cars. The police didn' have to do what they did in front of those peop They were customers. They trusted Dennyand now he was a criminal What the police were doing wasn't right. There must have been a better what they had guns and bat ons. They had pepper spray and a Bers. And the SPD has all ways been not or iously nervous.

Denny followed their instructions and placed his hands on the counand spread his legs; the coppatted him down thoroughly

"Pl ease t ur n ar ound and pl ace your hands behind your back," t he cop said.

"You don't need handcuffs," Craig said angril yHe's not running anywhere!"

"Sir!" t he cop bar ked. "Hol d!"

Denny turned around and placed his hands behind his back. Theforer cuffed him.

"You have the right to remain sil ent," the cop said. "Anyt hing you s can and will be held against you—"

"How I ong is this going to take?" Denny as ked. "I have to pick up m daught er"

"I suggest you make other arrangements," the other poficerofaid.

"I can pick her up, Denny Mike said.

- "You're not on the list of approved pickup people."
- "So who should I call?"
- "...an at t or ney wil l be appoint ed t o you..."
- "Call Mark Fein," Denny said, desperat e. "Hen the comput er
- "Do you under st and t hese right s as I have read t hem to you?"
- "Do you need me to bail you out?" Craig asked. "What ever you need ___"
- "I have no idea what I need," Denny said. "Call Mark. Maybe he can pick up Zoë."
 - "Do you understand the rights as I have and them?"
 - "I under st and!" Denny snappedYes. I under st and!"
 - "What are you being arrested for?" Mike asked.

Denny looked to the offcers, but they said not hing. They wait ed for Denny to answer the question. They were well trained in the sophistica met hods of breaking down a subject —make him voice his own crime.

- "Rape of a chil d in t he t hir d degree," Denny said.
- "F el ony rape," one of t he cops cl ar ified.
- "But I didn'r ape anyone," Denny said to the cop. "Who behind this? What child?"

There was a long pause. The people in the lobby were rapt. Denny w standing before them all, his hands bound behind his back, they could alsee how he was a prisoner nowhe had no use of his hands now he could not race a car nowAll attention was on the police and their blue-gray s with the epaulets and their black guns, sticks, wands, and leather pack

wrapped around their waists. It was **drame**na. Everyone want ed to know the answer to the quest io *Mhat child?*

"The one you raped," the cop replied simply

I despised him for what he was doing, but I had to admire his drama fl air; wit hout another word, the police took Denny away

Much of what happened to Denny regarding the cust ody suit concerning Zoë as well as the criminal chas of rape of a child in the third degree w not witnessed by me. These events spanned close to three years of our as one of the tactics of Maxwell and the wasto drag out the process in order to deplete Denny of money and destroy his will, as well as to plof his desire to see Zoë mature in alloving and supportive environment. was denied access to much information. I was not invited to attend any the legal proceedings, for instance. I was allowed to attend only a few meetings Denny had with his attornewark Fein, specifically hose that occurred at Wetrola Coffee (because Mark Fein had a fancy for the barista with the pierced eyebrow and the dark chocol at e eyes). I did not accom Denny to the police station after his arrest. I was not present for his booking, his arraignment, or his subsequent lie detector testing.

Much of what I will tell you about the ordeal that followsed extree is a reconstruction based on information compiled by me from secondha knowledge, overheard conversations, and established legal practices as have gleaned from various television shows, most especial lyandes. Order series and its spin-fof, Special Notime Unit Criminal Internated the much maligned Trial by Jury Further details regarding police methodol and terminology are based on two of the very best television shows in this tory of the genr Ehe Rockfod Files tarring James Garnwho also

starred in the excellent racing fiction of Prix and of course, the great est of all police drama Columbo starring the fabulous and exceptionally clever Peter Falk in the titlerole. (My sixth favorite actor is Peter FAnd, finallymy knowledge of the courtroom is based solely on the worthe great est of all courtroom dramatists, Sidney Lumet, whose many including The Verdict and 12 Angry Men, have influenced metremendously and, as a side note, I would say that his casting of Al PaciDogn Day Afternoon was nothing short of inspired.

My int ent, here, is to tell our story in a dramatically trut. Multiwear the facts may be less than accurate, please understand that the emotic true. The int ent is true. And, dramatically speaking, intention is every

They took him to a small room with ageatrable and many chairs. The walls were perforated with windows that looked out to the surrounding office, which was filled with police detectives doing their police work at heir desks, just like donaw & Order. Wooden blinds filtered the blue light that crept into the room, rippling the table and floor with long shadow

No one bot her ed him. A bad cop didn't pull his ears or hit him with a tel ephone direct or y or smash his fingers in the door or smack his head against the chalkboard, as often happens on tel evision. No. After being booked and finger print ed and phot ographed, he was put in the room, alorand left there, as if the police hadgorten him entirel He sat by himself. He sat for hours with nothing. No teet, no water, no restrooms, no radio. No distractions. His crime and his punishment and himself. Alone.

Did he despair? Did he sil ent ly ber at e himsel f for all owing himsel f in that sit uat ion? Or did he final ly real ize what it is like to be me, to be dog? Did he under st and, as those interminable minutes ticked how being all one is not the same as being lonely? That being all one is a neutral stais like a blind fish at the bottom of the ocean: without eyes, and therefore without judgment. Is it possible? That which is around me does from my mood; my mood affects that which is around me. Is it true? Could Denny have possibly appreciated the subjective nature of loneliness, who will be minuted by the matter of loneliness, who will be made to be me to be m

is something that exists only in the mind, not in the world, and, like a is unable to survive without a willing host?

I like to think that he was alone for that time, but that he hought about his condition, but he did not despair

And then Mark Fein burst into the East Precinct on SeaCtalpet ol Hill; he burst in and began shouting. That is Mark Esemblustery style. Bombastic. Boisterous. Bold. Bellicose. Mark Fein is a capital letter is shaped like the lettemd he acts like the letter ash. Brazen. Bullish. Bellowing. He blew down the doorwll-rushed the desk, blasted the segeant on dutyand bailed out Denny

"What the fuck is this all about, Dennis?" Mark demanded on the st corner $% \left(1\right) =\left(1\right) \left(1\right) +\left(1\right) \left(1\right) \left(1\right) +\left(1\right) \left(1\right$

"I ts' not hing," Denny said, unint er est ed in t he conver sat ion.

"The fuck it is! A fift een-yearol d? Dennis! The fuck it is not hing!"

"She's lying."

"I s she? Did you have inter course with this girl?"

"No."

"Did you penet rat e any of her or ifices wit h your genit als or any ot h object?"

Denny st ar ed at Mark F ein and r efus ed t o ans.wer

"This is part of a pl an, do you see t hat?" Mark said, frustrated. "I coul dn't figure why t hey woul d fil e a bogus cust ody suit, but this changever yt hing."

Still, Denny said not hing.

"A pedophil e. A sex ofender. A st at ut or y rapist. A chil d mol estær t hese t er ms fit anywher e in t he concept of 't he best int er est of a chil d

Denny ground his teet h; his jaw muscles bul ged.

"My office, eight thirty tomorrow morning," Mark said. "Dobe'l at e.'

Denny bur ned.

"Where's Zoë?" he demanded.

Mar k F ein dug his heel int o t he pavement.

"They got to her before I could," he said. "The timing on this was no an accident."

"I'm going to get her Denny said.

"Don't!" Mark snapped. "Let them be. Now is not **the**ne for heroics. When you're stuck in quicks and, the worst thing you can do is struggle

"So now I'm stuck in quicks and?" Denny as ked.

"Dennis, you are in the quickest of all possible sand right." now

Denny wheel ed ar ound and start edfof

"And don't leave the state," Mark called after him. "And, Jesus Ch Dennis, don't even *look* another fifteen-yearld girl!"

But Denny had al ready rounded the corner and was gone.

Hands are the windows to a man's oul.

Wat ch in-car videos of race drivers enough, and you'll see the truth this statement. The rigid, tense grip of one driver reflects his rigid, te driving style. The nervous hand-slipe of another driver proves how uncomfortable he is in the call driver's hands should be relaxed, sensitive, aware. Much information is communicated through the steeri wheel of a car; too tight or too nervous a grip will not allow the infort o be communicated to the brain.

They say that senses do not operate alone, but rather are combined together in a special part of the brain that creates a picture of the body whole: sensors in the skin tell the brain about pressure, pain, heat; ser in the joint sand tendons tell the brain about the body it ion in space; sensors in the ears track balance; and sensors in intergrads condicate one's emotional stateo Toluntarily restrict one channel of information fool ish for a racer; to allow information to flow unfettered is divine.

Seeing Denny's hands shake was as upsetting for me as it was for hir After Eves' death, he glanced at his hands often, held them before his ey as if they werent' really his hands at all, held them up and watched the shake. He tried to do it so no one would see. "Nerves," he would say to whenever he caught me watching his manual examination. "Stress." And

t hen he wouldt uck t hem int o his pants pockets and keep t hem t here, or sight.

When Mike and Tony brought me home later that night, Denny was waiting on the dark porch with his hands in his pockets.

"Not only do I not want to talk about it," he said to them, "Mark t not to. So."

They stood on the walk, looking up at him.

"Can we come in?" Mike as ked.

"No," Denny replied, and then, aware of his abrupt ness, at tempted texplain. "I dont' feel like company right now

They stared at him for a moment.

"You don't have to talk about whatgoing on," Mike said. "But it' good to talk You can't keep ever yt hing inside. Is triot healt hy

"You'r e probably right," Denny said. "Butsinot how I operate. I jus need to...as simil at e...what going on, and then I 'll be able to talk. But now."

Neit her Mike nor Tony moved. It was like they were deciding if they would respect Denny'request to be left alone, or if they would storm him into the house and keep him company by force. They looked at each other and I could smell their anxiety; I wished that Denny would understand the depth of their concern for him.

"You'll be all right?" Mike asked. **EVA**On't have to worry about the gas oven being left on and you lighting a cigarette or something?"

"I ts' el ect r ic," Denny s aid. "And I dons moke."

"He'll be all right, önly said to Mike.

"You want us to keep Enzo or anything?" Mike asked.

"No."

"Bring you some groceries?"

Denny shook his head.

"He'll be all right, only said again, and tugged at Mike' arm.

"My phone's al ways on," Mike said. "Went y-four-hour crisis hot line. Need to talk, need anything, call me."

They ret reat ed down t he wal k.

"We fed Enzo!" Mike call ed from the all ey

They left, and Denny and I went inside. He took his hands from his pockets and held them up to look at them shaking.

"Rapists don't get cust ody of their little girls," he said. "See how tworks?"

I followed him into the kit chen, for a moment concerned that he halied to Mike and Tony and that perhaps we did have a gas oven after all. he didn't go to the oven, he went to the cupboard and took out a glass. he reached into where he kept the liquor and took out a bottle. He pour drink.

It was absurd. Depressed, stressed, hands shaking, and now he was going to get himself drunk? I coultdat and for it. I barked sharply at hi

He l ooked down at me, dr ink in hand, and I up at him. I f I 'd had han I woul d have opened one of t hem and s l apped him wit h it .

"What 's the mat teEnzo, too much of a cliché for you?"

I bar ked again. To much of a *patheti c*cl iché for me.

"Don't judge me," he said. "Thats' not your job. Your job is to support me, not judge me."

He drank the drink and then glared at me, and I did judge him. He was acting just as they wanted him to act. They were rattling him, and he wabout to quit and then it would be over and I 'd have to spend the rest of life with a drunkard who had not hing to do but stare lifelessly out fro dead eyes at pictures flashing by on the TV screen. This wasn'y Denny This was a pathetic character from a hackneyed television drand. I didn't like him at all.

I left the room thinking I would go to bed, but It viialnt' to sleep in the same room as this Denny impost withis Denny facsimile. I went into Zoë's bedroom, curled up on the floor next to her bed, and tried to slee Zoë was the only one I had left.

Lat er—t hough I donknow how much—he st ood in t he door way

"The first time I took you for a drive in my car when you were a pup you puked all over the seat," he said to me. "But I tlight'e up on you."

I lift ed my head from the ground, not under standing his point.

"I put the booze awayhe said. "I 'm better than that."

He turned and walked awayl heard him shuffe around in the living room and then turn on the TV

So he didn't fall hopelessly into the bottle, the refuge of the weak the maudlin. He got my point. Gestures are all that I have.

I found him on the couch wat ching a video of Eve, Zoë, and me, from years ago when we went to Long Beach, on the Washington coast. Zoë was a toddlerI remembered that weekend well; we were all so young, it seemed, chasing kit es on the wide beach that went on for miles. I sat not the couch and wat ched, too. We were so naive; we had no knowledge of where the road would take us, no idea that we would ever be separated. beach, the ocean, the skyI t was there for us and only for us. A world without end.

"No race has ever been won in the first cor, "ehe said. "But plenty of races have been lost there."

I looked at him. He reached out, settled his hand on the crown of m head, and scratched my ear like he has always done.

"That 's right," he said to me. "If we're going to be a clichés lbæt à positive cliché."

Yes: the race is long—to finish first, first you must finish.

I love very few things more than a nice long walk in the drizzle of Seat don't care for the heaviness of real rain; I like the misting, the feeling tiny droplets on my muzzle and eyel ashes. The freshness of the haich has been suddenly infused with ozone and negative ions. While rain is heavy and can suppress the scents, a light shower actually amplifies sit releases the molecules, brings odor to life, and then carries it throuair to my nose. Which is why I love Seattle more than any other place. Thunder hill Raceway Park. Because, while the summers are veryotheye the damp season begins, nary a day goes by without a helping of my mucle oved drizzle.

Denny took me for a wal k in the drizzle, and I relished it. Eve had composed been dead for a few days, but since her deat h, had felt so bottled up and congested, sitting with Denny in the house for much of the time, breath the same stale air over and over emed to crave the change, too; instead of jeans, a sweat shirt, and his yellow sl,ibkeput on a pair of dark slacks, and he wore his black trench coat over a high-necked cashmere sweater

We walked north out of MadisonaVI ey and into there tum. Once past the danger ous part, where there is no walkway and the cars drive over the safe speed limit, we turned on the smaller road, and Denny released me from my leash.

This is what I love to do: I love to run through a field of wet gras has not been mowed recent ly love to run, keeping my snout low to the ground so the grass and the sparkles of water cover my face. I imagine myself as a vacuum cleanes ucking in all the smells, all the life, a speasummer grass. It reminds me of my childhood, back on the farm in Spar where there was no rain, but there was grass, there were fields, and I

I ran and I ran that .day.d Denny walked on, trudging steadil. At the point where we usually turned around, we kept going. At Wossed the pedestrian bridge and curled up into Montlake. Denny reattached my $l \in A$ and we crossed a lager road and we were in a new park! I loved this one, too. But it was different.

"I nt er l aken," Denny said t o me as he unl eashed me.

Interlaken. This park was not fields and flatland. In grants ed and twisty ravine painted with vines and bushes and groundcovented by the tallest of trees and a canopy of leaves. It was wonderful. As Denny followed the path, I bounded up and down the hillside, hiding in the low brush and pretending I was a secret agent, or running as fast as I coult hrough the obstacles and pretending I was a predator like in the movehunting something down, tracking my prey

For a long time we walked and ran in this park, me running five pace for every one of Dennys, until I was exhausted and thir Weyemerged from the park and walked in a neighborhood that was for eight ome. Denst opped in a café to purchase a cup of cofe for himself. He brought some water for me, which was in a paper cup and diffult to drink, but sated monetheless.

And we cont inued wal king.

I have all ways loved activity and walking, especially with Demyny favorite walking part næmd especially in the drizzle, but I have to admiat that time I was getting quite tire that Wheen out for more than two hours, and after a long walklike that, I like to go home for a playful toweling off, and then settle down for a nicelong nap. But there was no nap; we kept walking.

I recognized Fift eent lyenue when we reached it, and I knew Vol unteer Park quite well. But I was surprised when we went into the View CemeteryOf course, I knew the importance of Lakiew Cemetery though I had nevebeen there. I had seen a documentary on Bruce Lee; Lake View is where he is buried, alongside his son, Brandon, who was a wonderful actor until his untimely death. I feel very badly for Brando because he fell victim to the family curse, but also because the last filmade was The Crow, an unfortunate title for an unfortunate film based comic book written by someone who clearly had no idea of the real nature of crows. But that a discussion for another time. What ered the cemetery and we did not seek out the graves of Bruce and Brandon Lee, two very actors. We sought something else. Following the paved road to the northoped around the central hill and came upon a temporary tent struction under which many people were as sembled.

They were all dressed nicely and those who wert eport of ected from the drizzle by the tent were holding umbrellas. I mmediatea w Zoë.

Ah. The light switch—it either on or it off. Denny had dressed for the event.

We approached the people, who wereslightly digamized, milling about, their collective attention fragmeffthedproceedings had not yet begun.

We got very close to them, and then, suddensloymeone broke of from the group. A man. And then another man, and anothethe three of them walked toward us.

One of t hem was Maxwel l. The others were Esver others, whose names I never knew because they showed themselves so infrequently

"You're not wel come here," Maxwell said sternly

"She's my wife," Denny said cal ml.y"The mot her of my chil d."

She was there, the child. Zoë saw her fat. Hene waved at him, and he waved back.

"You're not wel come here, Maxwell said again. "Leave, or I'll call police."

The two brothers raised themselves. Pre-battle posturing.

"You al ready cal led them, didnyou?" Denny as ked.

Maxwell sneered at Denny

"You were war ned," he said.

"Why are you doing this?"

Maxwel l pushed up int o Denny'per sonal space.

"You've never been good to Eve," Maxwell said. "And with what you did to Annika, I will not trust you with Zoë."

"Not hing happened t hat night —"

But Maxwell had already turned. "Please escor **SMf**t away from here," he said to his two sons, and he abruptly walked away

In the distance, I saw Zoë, unable to contain herself any longer; sljumped out of her seat and ran toward us.

"Beat it," one of the men said.

"I ts' my wife's funer al ," Denny said. "I 'm st aying."

"Get the hell out of here," the other man said, jabbing Denny in the

"Punch me if you want," Denny said. "I won'fight back."

"Chil d mol est er!" the first man hissed, flingingands into Dennys chest. Denny didn't budge. A man who drives a two-thousand-pound car a one hundred sevent y mil es per hour does not get flustered by the honkithe geese.

Zoë reached us and leapt at Dennyle hoist ed her int ot he air and propped her on his hip and kissed her cheek.

"How's my baby?" he as ked.

"How's my daddy?" she replied.

"I'm get ting by he said. He turned to the brother who had just push him. "Sorry I didnt catch what you just said. Maybe you'd like to repeat in front of my daught er

The man took a step back, and thenrish rushed up to us. She inserted hersel f between Denny and the brothers. She told them to leave, and sl turned to Denny

"Please," she said. "I under st and why you're here, but itt dændone like this. I really donhink you should st.äyShe hesit at ed for a moment, and then she said: "I'm sor. "You must be so alone."

Denny didn't respond. I looked up at him, and his eyes were full of tears. Zoë not iced, too, and started crying with him.

"I ts' okay t o cr *y' she said. "Gr andma says cr ying hel ps because it was hes away t he hur t ing."

He looked at Zoë for a long moment and she at him. Then he sighed sadl y

"You help Grandma and Grandpa be strong, okay?" he said. "I have some import ant business to take care of. Ab Mammy. There are things that have to be done."

"I know" she said.

"You'll stay with Grandma and Grandpa for a little bit longer I ge ever yt hing worked out, okay?"

"They told me I might stay with them for a while."

"Well," he said regret fulf for andma and Grandpa are very good at thinking ahead."

"We can all compromise," flish said. "I know you'r e not a bad per sor ___"

"There is no compromise," Denny said.

"Given t ime, you'll see. Is tw'hat is best for Zoë."

"Enzo!" Zoë cal l ed out sudden,llyocat ing me beneat h heiShe squir med l oose of Denny and grabbed me ar ound t he neck. "Enzo!"

I was surprised and pleased by her hearty greeting, so I licked her

Tr is h l eaned in t o Denny

"You must have been missing Eve terribly who whis pered to him. "But to take advantage of a fift een-yeard digirl—"

Denny abrupt l y straight ened and pul l ed away from her

"Zoë," he said. "Enzo and I $\,$ are going to wat ch from a special $\,$ spot. Come on, Enzo."

He bent down and kissed her for ehead, and we wal ked away

Zoë and Trish wat ched us go. We continued on the circular path and walked up the bump of a hill to the top, where we stood under neath the trees, and, protected from the lightlying rain, wat ched the whole thing The people coming to attention. The man reading from a book. The peopl aying roses on the chin. And everyone leaving in their cars.

We stayed. We wait ed for the workers who came and dismant led the tents. The workers who came and used a strange winch device to lower coffin into the ground.

We stayed. We wat ched the men with their little Caterpillar as the shoveled all the dirt over. Now waited.

When they were all gone, we walked down the hill and we stood bef the mound of dirt and we cried. Whenel ed and we cried and we grabbed at handfuls of the dirt, the mound, and we felt the last bit, of heelrast part of her that we could feel, and we cried.

And final I ywhen we coul d do no more, we stoodAnd we began the I ong wal k home.

The morning after Eve' funeral, I could barely move. My body was sofs I couldn' even stand, and Denny had to look for me because I usually gup immediately and helped him with breakfast. I was eight years old, tyears older than Zoë, though I felt much more like her uncle than her brotherWhile I was still too young toesuan arthritic condition in my hips, thats' exactly what I senfed from. Degenerative arthritis caused by hip dysplasia. It was an unpleasant condition, yes; but in a sense it was relief that I could concentrate on my owniced if ties rather than dwell or other things that preoccupied my thoughts: specifically being stranded with the Twins.

I was quite young when I understood that my hips where mal. I had spent most of my first months of life running and playing with Demonty the two of us, and so I had little opport unity to compare myself with dogs. When I was old enough to frequent dog parks, I realized that keemy hind legs together in my gait—though much more comfortable for r was an obvious sign that my hips were defective. The last thing I want was to be seen as a misfit, and so I trained myself to walk and run in coways to disguise my defect.

As I mat ured and the protective cartil age at the ends of my bones away, as cartil age tends to do, the pain became more acute. And yet, ins of complaining, I tried to hide my problem. Perhaps I have always been

more like Eve than I 've ever admitted, for I distrusted the medical w immensel yand I found ways to compensate for my disability so I coulavoid a diagnosis that would undoubtedly hasten my demise.

As I ment ioned, I do not know the source of Extest rust of medicine the origins of my distrust, howevere all too cleawhen I was just a pup not more than a week or two old, the alpha man on the farm in Spangle introduced me to a friend of his. The man held me in his lap and petted n feeling my for elegs at length.

"They shoul d come of," he said to the al pha man.

"I'll hold him," the al pha man said.

"He needs anest het ic, \wl l. \v u shoul d have called melast week."

"I'm not wasting my money on a dog, Doc," the al pha man said. "Cut

I had no idea what they were talking about, but then the alpha man gripped me tightly around my midsection. The other man, "Doc," took hof my right paw and, with shiny scissors that glinted in the sunlight, soff my right dew clawMy right thumb. The pain blazed through my body a wracking, shattering pain. It was bloody and horrible and I cried out struggled mightily to free myself, but the alpha man squeezed me so tI could barely breathe. Then Doctook hold of myleft paw and, withou hesitating for a moment, cutfoffyleft thumbClickI remember that perhaps more than the pain. The sounClickSoloud. And then the blood was everywhereThe pain was so intense it left me shivering and weak. LaterDoc applied salve to my wounds and wrapped my forelegs tightly and whispered to me, "Ista mean bastard who wont pay for a little local anesthetic for his pups."

Do you see? This is why I distrust them. a mean bast and who will d the cutting without anest hetic because he wants to get paid.

The day after Eves' funeral, Denny took metothevet, a thin man who smelled of hayand who had a bottomless pocket full of treats. He felt hips and I tried not to wince, but I could be proved when he squeezed

cert ain places. He diagnosed me, prescribed ant i-inflammat or y medicat and said there was not hing else he could do exceptone day in the future, per for mexpensive sugery to replace my defective parts.

Denny t hanked t he man and dr ove me home.

"You have hip dyspl as ia," he said to me.

If I'd had fingers, I'd have shoved them into my ears until I burst own ear drums. Anything to avoid hearing.

"Hip dyspl as ia," he repeat ed, shaking his head in amazement.

I shook my head, too. Wh my diagnosis, I knewould come my end. Slowlyperhaps. Painfull, without a doubt; marked by the signposts laid out by the veterinarian. The visible becomes inevitable. The car goes where the eyes go. What ever the traumathat led too Edwerrust of medicine, I was able to see only therefore: she had been unable to look away from where the others had told her tolook. It is a rare person who can hear blunt authority of a terminal diagnosis, refuse to accept it, and choose different path. I thought of Eve and how quickly she embraced her deat once the people around her agreed to it; I considered the foretelling of own end, which was to be full of stering and pain, as death is believed to be by most of the world, and I tried to look away

Because of the criminal chars against Dennythe Twins had been granted a temporary restraining order that meant, pending challenge in court, didn't get to see Zoë at all for several months. Minutes after he was arrested, Maxwell and Teh filed a motion to terminate Dennyight to cust ody of any kind, since he was clearly an unfit parent. A pedophile. A sex offender.

Well. We all play by the same ruless just that some people spend more time reading those rules and figuring out how to make them work their behalf.

I have seen movies that involve abducted children and the grief and terror that southate the parents when their children are taken by strang Denny felt every bit of that grief, and, in my own whydid, too. And we knew where Zoë was. We knew who had taken her And, still, we could do not hing.

Mark Fein suggest ed it would be inflammatory to tell Zoë about t legal proceedings, and he suggest ed that Denny invent a story about dr race cars in Europe to explain his prolonged absence. Mark Fein also negotiated a letter exchange: not es and drawings made by Zoë would be delivered to Dennyand Denny could writeletters to his child, as long a agreed to allow those letters to be censored by with counsel. I will t

you, ever y vertical surface in our house was decorated with **Zdel** ight ful art work, and many long nights were spent by Denny and me crafting the letters we sent to Zoe, telling of Deneryploits on the European race circuit.

As much as I want ed Denny to act, to lash out against the establis in a bold and passionate way! respected his restraint. Denny has long admired the legendary driver Emerson Fittipal di. "Emmo," as he was c by his peers, was a champion of great stature and consist, emcy was known for his pragmatism on the track. This chances is not a good idea if choosing wrong may send you into the wall at I, nowist your car into a fiery met al sculpture that egency workers struggle to untangle while your flesh is melted from your bones by the invisible flames of burning et hanol. Not only did Emmo never panic, Emmo never put himself in a position where he might have to; like Emmo, Denny never took unnecessary risks.

While I, too, admire and try to emul at e Emmo, I still think that like to drive like Act on Senna, full of emotion and daring. I would like have packed our necessities in the BM, Wariven by Zoë's school one day to pick her up unannounced, and then headed directly for Canada. From Vancouver, we could have driven east to Montreal—where they have ma fabulous road courses and where they host a Formula One Grand Prix esummer—tolive by ourselves in peace for the rest of our lives.

But it was not my choice. I was not behind the wheel. No one cared whit about me. Which is why they were all in such a state of panic wher Zoë asked her grandparents if she could see mould see, no one had accounted for my whereabouts. The wins, not knowing where their elaborate fiction had placed me, immediately called Mark Fein, who immediately called Denny to outline the nature of our predicament.

"She believes it all," I could hear Mark shout over the phone, even though the phone was pressed to Densyear. "So where did you leave the fucking dog? You could have taken him with you, but there are quarant ir rules! Does she know about quarant ine?"

"Tel l her of course she can see Enzo," Denny said cal m'Enzo is staying with Mike and Tony while I 'm in Europe; Zoë likes them, and she believe it. I 'll have Mike bring Enzo over on Satur'day

And t hat's what happened. In the early after noon Mikeked me up and drove me over to Mercer Island, and Ispent the after noon playing Zoë on the great lawn. Before dinner time, Mikeretur ned me to Denny

"How did she look?" Denny as ked Mike.

"She looked terrific," Mike said. "She has her mot be mil e."

"They had a good t ime t oget her?"

"A fant ast ic time. They pl ayed all day

"F et ch?" Denny as ked, t hir st y for det ail s. "Did she us e t he Chuckit did t hey pl ay chase? Eve never l iked it when t hey pl ayed chase."

"No, most l y fet ch," Mike said kindl y

"I never minded when t hey pl ayed chase because I know Enzo, but I was al ways..."

"You know," Mike said, "somet imes they just flopped down on the grass and cuddled toget hert was really sweet."

Denny wiped his nose quickly

"Thanks, Mike," he said. "Real l.yThanks a l ot ."

"Anyt ime," Mike said.

I appreciated Mike'effort to appease Dennyeven though he was avoiding the truth. Or maybe Mike didn's ee what I sawMaybe he couldn't hear what I heard. Zoëprofound sadness. Her loneliness. Her whispered plans that she and I would somehow smuggle ourselftes of Europe and find her father

That summer wit hout Zoë was very painful for Denny addition to feel ing is ol at ed from his daught his career was derailed: though he was offered the opport unity to drive again for the racing team he was with tprevious year he was forced to decline, as the pending criminal case demanded that he remain in the state of Mington at all times or he wou for feithis bond. Further was not allowed to accept any of the lucrative teaching jobs and commercial work fefrs that came his way—after his spectacular experience affhunder hill, he was highly recommended in the commercial industry and received fefs over the phone fairly frequently. These jobs almost always took place in California, or sometimes in Ne or Texas, and occasionally in Connecticut, and therefore were for bidden him. He was a prisoner of the state.

And yet.

We are all aforded our physical existence so we can learn about our selves. So I under st and why Denay a deeper level, allowed this sit uation to befall him. I wtosay he created the sit uation, butaheowed it. Because he needed to test his mettle. He wanted to know how long level deep his foot on the accelerator before lifting. He chose this life therefore he chose this battle.

And I real ized, as the summer matured and I frequently visited Zc without Dennythat I was a part of this, too. I was integral to the dra Because on those late Saturday afternoons in, Jaftley Mike reviewed the events of the day with Denny and then returned to his own world, Denn would sit with me on the back porch and quiz me. "Did you play fet ch? I you tug? Did you chase?" He would ask, "Did you cuddle?" He would ask "How did she look? I s she eating enough fruit? Are they buying nic?"

I tried. I tried as hard as I could to form words for him, but they wouldn't come. I tried to beam my thoughts into his head via telepathy tried to send him the pictures I saw in my mind. I twit ched my ears. I cocked my head. I nodded. I pawed.

Until he smil ed at me and stood.

"Thanks, Enzo," he would say on those days. Where not too tired, are you?"

I would stand and wag. I 'm never tootired.

"Let's go, then."

He would grab the Chuckit and the tennis ball and walk me down to Blue Dog Park, and we would play fetch until the light grew thin and t mosquitoes came out of hiding, thirsty for their dinner

There was an occasion that summer when Denny found a teaching engagement in Spokane and, via Mike, our faux-I ntercontinental liaison as ked if the Twins could take me for the weekend; they agreed, as they hard grown accust omed to my presence in their home, and I all ways handled myself with the utmost dignity when I was around them, never soiling expensive rugs or carpets, never begging for food, and never drooling will slept.

I would much rat her have gone to racing school with Debuty I under stood that he depended on me to take care of Zoë, and also to act a some kind of a witness on his behal Though I could not relate to him the details of our visits, my presence, I think, reassured him in some way

On a Friday afternoon, I was delivered by Mike i**Ztoë**'s waiting embrace. She immediately ushered me into her room, and we played a game of dress-up together; to say that I was taking one for the team who be an understatement, considering the crazy out fits I was forced to we But that'my ego speaking; I knew my role as jester in **Zoë**ourt, and I was happy to play the part.

That evening Maxwell took me out side earlier than usuglingime to "get busy" When I came back inside, I was led to Zoë'oom, which already had my bed in it. Apparent, she had requested I sleep with her

r at her t han by t he back door, **G** od for bid, in t he gar age. I curl ed int o a ball and quickly dozed **G** f

A bit lat ext woke. The lights were dim. Zoë was awake and act ive, encircling my bed with piles of her steat animals.

"They'll keep you company" she whis per ed t o me as she sur r ounded me.

Seemingly hundreds of them. All shapes and sizes. I was being surrounded by teddy bears and gifes, sharks and dogs, cats and birds an snakes. She worked steadily and I wat ched, until I was not hing more t small at oll on the Pacific, and the animals were my coral reef. I found somewhat amusing and touching that Zoë cared to share me with her animals in that wayand I drifted of osleep feeling protected and safe.

I awoke later in the night and saw that the wall of animals around was quite high. Still, I was able to shiftweight and change position to make myself more comfortable. But when I did, I was shocked by a fright ening sight. One of the animals. The one on top. Staring straight ame. It was the zebra.

The replacement zebra. The one she had chosen to fill in for the dent had dismant led it self before me so long ago. The horrifying zebra my past.

The demon had returned. And, though it was dark in the room, I kno saw a glint of light it its eyes.

As you can imagine, my sleep that night was spar he last thing I want ed was to awaken amid animal car nage because the demon had returned. I for ced myself to stay awake; yet I couled probut drift fof Each time I opened my eyes, I found the zebra staring at me. Like a gargoyle, it stood on a cathedral of animals above me, wat ching. The otlanimals had no life; they were toys. The zebra alone knew

I felt sluggish all, that I did my best to keep up, and I tried to cat up on my sleep by napping quiet l. To any observer I'm sure I gavefothe

impression of being quite contented; howeydr was anxious about night fall, concerned that, once again, the zebra would torture me with mocking eyes.

That after noon, as thewins took their alcohol on the deck as they tended to do and Zoë wat ched tel evision in the TV room, I dozed out sic the sun. And I heard them.

- "I know its' for the best," rTsh said. "But still, I feel badly for him.
- "I ts' for the best," Maxwell said.
- "I knowBut still..."
- "He for ced himself on a teenage girl," Maxwell said stef What kind of a father preys on innocent young girls?"
- I lift ed my head from the warm wood of the deck and sawis Ti cluck and shake her head.
 - "What?" Maxwell demanded.
 - "From what I hearhe's not that innocent."
- "What youhear!" Maxwell blurted. "He for ced himself on a young go.
 That 's rape!"
- "I knowI knowI ts' just that the timing of her coming for ward is...a big coincidence."
 - "Are you suggest ing t hat she made it up?"
- "No," Trish said. "But why did Pete wait to tell us about it until af you complained to him so bit terly that you were certain we would den' cust ody of Zoë?"
- "I don't care about any of that," Maxwell said, waving heft 'affle wasn't good enough for Eve, and hes not good enough for Zoë. And if hes stupid enough to get caught with his pants down and his pecker in his fit

you're going to be damn sure I 'm going to seize the moment. Zoë will be a better childhood with us. She will have a better moral raising, a bett financial raising, a better family life, and you know itis Tr. You know it!"

"I know I know" she said, and sipped her amber drink with the bright red cherry drowned at the bottom of the glass. "Butnbe'a bad person."

He pour ed his drink down his gull et and slapped the glass down on teak table.

"I ts't ime to start dinnehe said, and he went inside.

I was stunned. I, too, had not edthe coincidence of events, and I had been suspicious since the beginning. But to hear the words, the coldnes Maxwells tone.

I magine this. I magine having your wife die suddenly of a brain cance Then imagine having her parents at tack you mer cil essly in order to gain cust ody of your daught ell magine that they exploit all egations of sexual mol est at ion against you; they hire very expensive and clever lawyers because they have much more money than you have. I magine that they prevent you from having any contact with your six-yeard daughter for months on end. And imagine they restrict your ability to earn money to support yourself and, of course, as you hope, your daughterwlong would you last before your will was broken?

They had no idea who t hey were deal ing wit h. Denny would not kneel before t hem. He would never quit; he would never break.

With disgust, I followed them into the househ Tbegan her preparations and Maxwell took his jar of peppers from the refrigerator inside me, a darkness brewed. Contrivers. Manipulators. They were no longer people to me. They were now the Evikins. Evil, horrible, dastardly people who stend themselves with burning hot peppers in ord to fuel the bile in their stomachs. When they laughed, flahoutsout of their noses. They were not worthy of life, these people. They were disgusting creatures, nitrogen-based life forms that lived in the very docorners of the very deepest lakes where there is no light and the press

crushes ever yt hing to sand; deep, dark places where oxygen would neve dare vent ure.

My anger with the Evilwins fed my thirst for revenge. And I was not above using the tools of my dogness to exact justice.

I present ed myself to Maxwell as hetest another pepper into his mouth and pulverized it with the ceramic teethheremoved at night. I before him. I lift ed a paw

"Want a treat?" he asked me, clearly surprised by my gesture.

I bar ked.

"Her e you go, boy."

He extracted a pepper from the bottle and held it before my nose. I a very lage one, long and artificially green and smelling of sulfites and nitrates. The devil candy.

"I don't hink those are good for dogs," is h said.

"He likes them," Maxwell countered.

My first thought was to take the pepper oncini and a couple of Maxwells' fingers with it. But that would have caused real problems, a likely would have been euthanized before Mike could return to save me I didn't take his fingers. I did, howeverake the pepperI knew it was bad for me, that I would serfimmediate discomfort. Butkinew my discomfort would pass, and I anticipated the unpleasant rebosenti, ef which is what I wanted. After all, I am just a stupid dog, unworthy of human scorn, without the brains to be responsible for my own bodily functions. A dumb dog.

I observed their dinner carefully because I want ed to see for myse The Twins served Zoë some kind of chicken covered in a creamy sauce. They didn't know that while Zoë loved chicken cutlets, she never at etl with sauce, and certainly never with cream; she disliked the consistence

When she didn't eat the string beans they served; In asked if she would like a banana instead. Zoë replied faf matively and Trish made some banana slices, which Zoë barely picked at because they were crudely sli and speckled with brown spots, which she always avoided. (When Denny prepared her bananas for hehe took great care in slicing them in uniforn thickness after removing any and all brown spots he could find.)

And these agents of evil—these supposed grandparents!—thought would be better biwith them! Bah! They didn't spend a moment thinking about her welfare; after dinnerhey didn't even ask why she hadn't eaten the bananas. They allowed her to leave the table having eaten almost nothing. Denny never would have allowed that. He would have prepared her something she liked and he would have required that she eat facient dinner to continue to grow in a healthy way

All the while I wat ched, I seet hed. And in my st omach, a foul concoct ion st eeped.

When it was time to take me out that night, Maxwell opened the F1 door to the back deck and began his idiotic chanting: "Get buby."

I didn't go out side. I looked up at him and I thought about what he doing, how he was rending our famil, ypulling apart the fabric of our live for his own smug, self-congratulatory purposes; I thought about how Trish were grossly inferior guardians for my Zoë. I crouched in my staright there, inside the house, and I shat a massive, spuppent pile of diarrhea on his beautiful, expensive, linen-colored Berber carpet.

"What the hell?" he shouted at me. "Bad dog!"

I tur ned and trotted cheer fully to Zoëm.

"Get busymot her fucker" I said as I left. But, of course, he couldn' hear me.

As I settled into my lagoon of fædufnimals, I heard Maxwell excla loudly and call for Tehto clean up my mess. I looked at the zebra, stil

per ched on his t hr one of l ifel ess animal car casses, and I growled at it soft l y but very ominous l ynd t he demon knew The demon knew not t o mess with me t hat night.

Not that night, or ever again.

Oh, a breat h of Sept ember!

The vacations were done. The lawyers were back at work. The court were at full staffhe post ponements were finished. The truth would be had!

He l eft t hat morning wearing t he only suit he owned, a crumpled khe two-piece from Banana Republic, and a dark tie. He looked very good.

"Mike will come by at lunch and take you for a walk," he said to me. don't know how long this will go."

Mike came and wal ked me briefly through the neighborhood so I wouldn't be lonel, and then he left again. Later that afternoon, Denny returned. He smiled down at me.

"Do I need to reint roduce you two?" he asked.

And behind him was Zoë!

I leapt in the alr bounded. *knew* it! *Iknew* Denny would vanquish the Evil Twins! I felt like doing flips. Zoë had returned!

It was an amazing after noon. We asked in the yar dWe ran and laughed. We hugged and cuddled. We made dinner together and sat at our table and at e. It felt so good to be together affaired dinner they at eice cream in the kit chen.

"Ar e you going back to Eur ope soon? Zoë as ked out of the blue.

Denny froze in place. The story had worked so well, Zoë still belie it. He sat down across from her

"No, I 'm not going back to Eur ope," he said.

Her face lit up.

"Yay!" she cheer ed. "I can have my room back!"

"Act ual l," Denny said, "I'm afr aid not yet."

Her for ehead crinkl ed and her lips pursed as she at tempt ed to puzzl his statement. I was puzzl ed, too.

"Why not?" she asked, final \ frustration in her voice. "I want to conhome."

"I knowhoney, but the lawyers and judges have to make the decision on where you'll live. It part of what happens when someone mommy dies."

"J ustellt hem," she demanded. "J ustellt hem that I'm coming home. don't want to live there anymore. I want to live with you and Enzo."

"I ts' a l it t l e mor e compl icat ed t han t hat," Denny hemmed.

"J us *tel l*t hem," she repeat ed angril "J us *tel l*t hem!"

"Zoë, someone has accused me of doing somet hing very bad—"

"J us ttel lt hem."

"Someone said I did something very bad. And even though I know I didn't do it, now I have to go to court and prove to everyone that I did it."

Zoë t hought about it for a moment.

"Was it Grandma and Grandpa?" she asked.

I was very impressed with the laserlike accuracy of her inquiry

"Not —" Denny started. "No. No, it wasnt'hem. But ...t heynow about it ."

"I made t hem l ove me t oo much," Zoë said softllooking int o her bowl of mel t ed ice cream. "I shoul d have been bad. I shoul d have made t hem want to keep me."

"No, honey, no," Denny said, dismayed. "Don't say that. No should shine with all of your light all the time. I'll work this out. I promis

Zoë shook her head wit hout meet ing his eyes. Under st anding t hat the conversation was overDenny cleared her bowl and began to clean the dishes. I felt badly for them both, but more so for Zoë, who continued face sit uations that were loaded with subtleties beyond her experience fraught with the conflicting desires of those around fight ing for supremacy like vines entangled on a trellis. Sædleywent into her bedroom to play with the animals she had left behind.

Lat er in the evening, the door bell rang. Denny answered it. Mark F was there.

"I ts't ime," he said.

Denny nodded and call ed for Zoë.

"This was a major victory for us, Dennis," Mark said. "It means a la You under st and t hat, right?"

Denny nodded, but he was sad. Like Zoë.

"Ever y ot her weekend, Friday aft er school unt il Sunday aft er dinne she's yours," Mark said. "And ever y Wonesday, you pick her up aft er school and del iver her before eight o'clock, right?"

"Right," Denny said.

Mark Fein looked at Denny for a long time wit hout speaking.

"I'm fucking proud of you," he said, final.l'y don't know what goes on in that head of yours, but you're a fucking compet it'or

Denny br eat hed in deepl.y

"That is what I am," he agreed.

And Mark Fein took Zoë awayShe had just returned and she was goin away again. It took me some time to fully grasp the situation, but I understood, ultimatel hat the court case earlier in the day was not Denny's criminal trial, but a cust ody hearing, a hearing that had been delayed over and overput of for months because the lawyers were going to their houses on Lopez I sland with their own families and the judge going to Cle Elum to his ranch. I felt betrayedew that those people, those oficials of the court, had no clue as to the feelings I had witness that night at the dinner table. If they had, they would have stopped everything, canceled all of their other obligations, and ensured a swift resolution to our situation.

As it was, we had taken only our first step. The restraining order h been quashed. Denny had won visit at ion rights. But Zoë was still in the cust ody of the Evilwins. Denny was still on trial for a fel onygenhe didn't deserve. Not hing had been solved.

And yet. I had seen them toget. Herhad seen them look at each other and giggle with relief. Which retain med my faith in the balance of the universe. And while I understood that we had merely successfully nay the first turn of a very long race, I felt that things boded well for us; was not one to make mist akes, and with fresh tires and a full load of fu would prove a formidable foe to anyone challenging him.

The flash and fury of a sprint race are grand. The strategies and skill or ace of five hundred miles are spectacul Brut the race for the true racer the enduro. Eight hours, twelve hourwell ty-four Eventwenty-five. I introduce you to one of the fgot ten names in automotive racing history: Luigi Chinetti.

Chinet ti was a tireless driver who participated in every motors por at Le Mans from 1932 through 1953. He is known mostly for winning the first ever Ferrari victory at the 24 Hours of Le Mans, in 1949. Chinet the drove more than the twenty-three-and-one-half of those the twenty-four hours the twenty minutes, he relinquished control of the car to his co-driver Mitchell-Thompson, the carowner, a baronfrom Scotland. That is all. Chinetti drove all but the twenty minutes of the the twenty-four hours. And haven.

A brilliant drivenechanic, and businessman, Luigi Chinettilater convinced Ferraritosell their cars in the United States, and he convinthem to grant him the first—and for many years, the only—Ferrari dealership in this count. He sold expensive red automobiles to very rich people, and they paid very rich prices for their toys. Chinettial ways ke his client list confidential, shunning the garish light of conspicuous consumption.

A great man, Luigi Chinetti. Clever and smart and resourceful. He in 1994 at the age of ninety-three years. I often wonder who he is, who possesses his soul. Does a child know his own spiritual background, his own pedigree? I doubt it. But somewhere, a child surprises himself will endurance, his quick mind, his dexterous hands. Somewhere a child accomplishes with ease that which usually takes græmttefAnd this child who has been blind to his past but whose heart still beats for the thri race, this child'soul awakens.

And a new champion walks among us.

How quickl y

How quickly a year passes, like a mout hful of food snat ched from the maw of et er nit.y

How quickl y

With little drama, comparatively speaking, to mark the months, the slipped by one by one, until another fall lay before us. And still, almost nothing had changed. Back and forth, round and round, the lawyers dance and played their game, which was merely a game to them. But not to us

Denny took Zoë on schedule, every other weekend, everyethesday afternoon. He took her to places of cultural enrichment. Art museums Science exhibits. The zoo and the aquarium. He taught her things. And sometimes, on secret missions, he took us to the go-karts.

Ah. The electric karts. She was just big enough to fit when he took l And she was good. She knew the karts immediatehy if she had been born to them. She was quick.

How quickl y

With little instruction she climbed behind the wheel, tucked her go hair into a helmet, buckled her harness, and was No fear. No hesit at ion. No waiting.

"You take her to Spanaway?" the worker boy asked Denny after her very first session.

Spanaway was a pl ace sout h of us where chil dren oft en pract iced gokart ing on an out door course.

"Nope," Denny replied.

"'Cause she coul d kick your ass," the kid said.

"I doubt it." Denny laughed.

The worker kid glanced nervously at the clock. He looked through t glass barrier to the cash register people. It was mid-afternoon, after lunch rush and before anyone showed up for the evening activities. The place was empty except for us; they only let me in because I had been t before and I had never created a problem.

"So take a session," the kid said She wins, you pay. You win, you don't pay"

"You'r e on," Denny said, grabbing a hel met from the rack of hel met that people can borrow—he hadnbothered to bring his own.

They started their race, a flying start, with Denny giving Zoë a bit edge, taking it easy on her For several lapse dogged her, stayed on her back tires, let her know he was there. Then he tried to pass her

And she sl ammed the door on him.

He tried again to pass. She slammed the door

Again. Same result. It was like she knew where he was at every moment. In a kart with no mirror **gaM**ng a hel met that allowed no peripheral vision. Sh**g**el him. She knew.

When he made his moves, she shut him down. Ever y single time.

Consider that she had a tremendous advantage, being only sixty pout o his one hundred fift. That's a huge weight differential in karting. Still Consider that he was a thirty-yeard semiprofessional race car driver an she was a seven-year old neophyte. Consider the possibilities.

She took the checkerGod bless her littlesoul. She took the checker beat her old man. And I was so happy was so happy that I didmind it when I had to wait in the car while they went into Asn Dyrner for French fries and milk shakes.

How did Denny sust ain himsel f for the duration of this ordeal? Her how: He had a secret. His daughter was better and quicker and smarter he was. And while the EviTwins may have restricted his ability to see h when he was allowed to see hehe received all the engy he needed to maint ain his focus.

"This is not a conversation I like to have," Mark Fein said, leaning back the iron chair until it groaned with fat igues "Inte' I have too oft en."

Spring, again. Vict rol a. Dark chocol at e eyes.

I slept at my mas's effect on the sidewalk of Fift eent he Aue, which had been war med by the sunlike a cooking stone. Slept and sprawled, barely lifting my head to acknowledge the occasional petting I receive from the passers by ll of whom, on some level, wanted to be more likerable to enjoy a nap in the sun without guilt, without whirty le did they know that, in fact, I was quite apprehensive, as I always was at our meetings with Mark.

"I'm ready Denny said.

"Money."

Denny nodded to himsel f and sighed. "I 've missed some invoices."

"You owe me a shit load, Dennis," Mark clarified. "I 've been giving y slack, but I have to cut you.öf

"Give me anot her t hirt v days of slack," Denny said.

"Can't do it, friend."

"Yes, you can," Denny said fir ml.y"Yes. You can."

Mark sucked on his latte.

"I have investigators. Lie detector specialists. Paralegals. Suppor I have to pay these people."

"Mark," Denny said. "I'm asking you for a favoGive me thirty days."

"You'll be paid in full?" Mark asked.

"Thirty days."

Mark finished his cofee drink and stood.

"Okay. Thirty days. Our next meeting is at Caffé &."

"Why Café Vit a?" Denny as ked.

"My dark chocol at e eyes. They left for a richer roast sate Café Vt a, so thats' where our next meeting will be. As long as you pay your bill. Thirty days."

"I 'll payDenny said. "You keep wor king."

The sol ut ion had been put to Denny by Mark Fein: if Denny were to quit claim to Zoë, the criminal chars would vanish. That what Mark Fein said. As simple as that.

Of course, that was specul at ion on his part. The EwihsTdidn't tell him that outright, but, drawing on his experience, Mark Fein ka Bewause the mother of the girl was is his cousin, was part of it. And also because their lawyer had made it clear in the initial hearings that they did not for Denny to spend any time in jail for hisferise. They simply want ed him to be registered as a sexferior. Sex offenders don't get cust ody of their little girls.

"They'r e ver y devious," Mark not ed. "And t hey'r e ver y good."

"As good as you?" Denny wonder ed.

"No one is as good as me. But they're very good."

At one point Mark even counseled Dennythat perhaps the best thin Zoë would be to stay with her grandparents, as they were better ablet provide for the comforts of her childhood, as well as pay for her collet education, when that became necessar Further Mark suggested, were Denny not to be the principal caregiver for Zoë, he would be much more

able to accept instructing and driving jobs out of state, as well as part in racing series worl dwide, if he so chose. He noted that a child needs a stable home environment, which, he said, could be best provided in a sin housing location and with consistent schooling, preferably in the subur or at a private school in an urban neighborhood. Mark assured Denny he would settle for nothing short of a liberal visitation schedule. He speal ong time convincing Denny of these truths.

I wasn' convinced. Of course, I understood that a race car driver me be selfish. Success at any endeavor on an elitelevel demands selfishner But for Mark Feintosay Denny should put his own needs above the need of his family because concurrent success in both fields was impossible simply wrong. Many of us have convinced ourselves that compromise is necessary to achieve our goals, that all of our goals are not attainable should eliminate the extraneous, prioritize our desires, and accept less the moon. But Denny refused to yield to that idea. He want ed his daugh and he want ed his racing career and he refused to give up one for the oth

Things change quickly on a racecourse. I remember wat ching one of Denny's races, when I had accompanied him to the track and was looked after by his crewWe wat ched near the start/finish line as, with one lap remaining, Denny was in third place, behind two other cars. They drove past us, and when they came back around for the checkered flag, Denny was by himself; he won the race. When asked how he had overtaken two cars on the final lap, he simply smiled and said that when he saw the st wag one finger, meaning it was the last lap, he got a flash, and he said to himself, "I will win this race." One of the racers ahead of him sputhof track, the other locked up his wheels and gave Denny an easy opening to pass.

"I ts' never t oo l at e," Denny s aid t o Mar k. "Things change."

Very true. Things change quickl And, as if to prove it, Denny sold ou house.

We had no money left. They had sucked him dr.yMark had threat ened to cease working for Denny'defense. There was littleelse Denny could

He rent ed a truck from U-Haul and called on his friends, and one weekend that summerwe moved all of our belongings from our house in the Central District to a one-bedroom apart ment on Capit ol Hill.

I loved our house. It was small, I. Knowbedrooms and one bathroom. And the yard was too small for a good running. And somet in at night the buses on the stroet etooloud. But I had grown attached t my spot in the living room on the hardwood fl,owhich was very warm in the winter when the sunstreamed in through the windowd I loved using my dog door, which Denny had installed for me so I could venture into backyard at will. I would often go out on the back porch on a cold and day when Denny was at work and sit and breathe and watch the movement of the tree branches and smell the rain.

But that was no more. That was gone. From that point forward, my were spent in an apart ment with carpeting that smelled of chemicals, insulated windows that didnbreathe proper, laynd a refrigerator that hummed tool oudly and seemed to work too hard to keep the food cold. And no cable TV

Still, I tried to make the best of it. If I squeezed myself into the bet ween the arm of the sofa and the sliding glass door that opened onto bal cony that was too small to be considered a bal cony at all, if I wed a myself just so, I could see past the building across the street and, the narrow gap, I could see the Space Needle with its little bronze elevat tirelessly whisked visitors from the ground to the sky and back again.

Denny paid his account with Mark Fein. Shortly afterward, Mark Fein appoint ed to be a circuit judge, something about which I know little, exthat it is a lifetime appointment, it is quite prestigious, and it is not refusable. Denny found a new lawyer who didn'meet at Café Na or Victrola Cofee because he didn't care for young girls with eyebrow piercings and chocol at e eyes. Whereas Mark Fein was a letter B, this rone was a letter L. Mrawrence. Laconic, laid-back, lugubrious...Mark had spark and fire. This one had very lower.

This one asked for a continuance, which is what you can do in the legal world if you need time to read all the paper work. And while I underst was necessaryI was still concerned. Mark Fein had carried himself with the energy of someone who had already wonthe game and was politely waiting for you to count the chips to discover your lossLMwrence might have been very capable, but he carried himself morelike a hound without a hunt: alet-me-know-when-you're-ready look on his sad face. It so while it had seemed like we were getting close to the reckoning, suddenly the horizon shot away from us and, again, we were waiting for legal wheels to turn, which they did, but exceedingly slowly

Shortly after Denny began working with our new representation, we received more bad news. The Evil Wins were suing Denny for child support.

Dast ar dl, ys how Mar k F ein had des cribed t hem. So nown addit ion t o t aking his chil d fr om him, t hey demanded he pay for t he food t hey fed he

Mr. Lawr ence defended their act ion as a legit imate tactic, ruthless might be. He posed to Denny a question: "Does the end always just ify tl means?" And then, he answered it: "Apparent for them, it does."

I have an imaginary friend. I call him King Karma. I know that kar a force in this universe, and that people like the EwihsTwill receive karmic justice for their actions. I know that this justice will come wh universe deems it appropriate, and it may not be in this lifetime but in tnext, or the one after that. The current consciousness of the Wind nay never feel the brunt of the karmathey have incurred, though their soul absolutely will. I understand this concept.

But I don'l ike it. And so my imaginary friend does things for me. I you are mean to someone, King Karma will swoop out of the sky and cal you names. I f you kick someone, King Karma will bound from an alley a kick you back. I f you are cruel and vicious, King Karma will administer fit ting punishment.

At night, before I sleep, I talk to my imaginary friend and I send l the Evil Wins, and he exacts his justice. It may not be much, but with at I can do. Every night, King Karma gives them very bad dreams in which the are chased mercilessly by a pack of wild dogs until they awaken with a start, unable to fall as leep again.

It was an especially **fdicf**ult winter for me. Perhaps it was the stairs in apart ment building. Or maybe it was my genetic deficiency catching up t me. Or maybe I was just tired of being a dog.

I so longed to shed this body be free of it. I spent my longoly ess days watching the people who walked by on the street beholwgoing somewhere, all with important destinations. And me. Unable to unlock door and go to greet them. And, even if I had been able to greet them, I a dog's tongue and therefore would have been unable to speak to them. Unable to shake their hands. How I wanted to talk to these people! However to engage them in life! I wanted to participate, not just to obsowanted to judge the world around me, not merely be a supportive friend

And, looking back, I can tell you it was my state of mind, it was my outlook on life, that attracted me to that car and attracted that car that which we manifest is before us.

We walked back from Volunt eer Park late in the night, extending our usual quick jaunt because of the special weather conditions. It was not cold and not too warm, a gentle breeze blend snow fell from the sky was unsettled by the snow remember Seattle is rain. When rain or cold rain, Seattle is rain. Seattle is not show e are far too many hills for Seattle to be able to tolerate show yet there was snow

Denny oft en allowed meto walk home from the park without myle and that night I strayed too far from him. I was watching the flakes fagather in a thin layer on the sidewalk and on the street, aheadouth T Avenue, which was devoid of both cars and people.

"Yo, Zo!" he called. He whistled for me, his sharp whistle.

I looked up. He was on the other side of Aloha. He must have cross without my noticing.

"Come her e, boy!"

He slapped his thigh and, feeling detached from him, feeling someholike there was a world between us, not merely a two-laneroad, I boun toward him into the street.

He suddenly cried out, "No! Wit!"

The tires did not scream, as tires do. The ground was covered with a thin layer of snowThe tires hushed. They shushed. And then the car hit is

So st upid, I thought. I am so st upid. I am the st upidest dog on the pl anet, and I have the audacity to dream of becoming a man? I am st upi

"Set t l e down, boÿ

His hands were on me. Warm.

"I didn't see—"

"I know"

"He shot out—"

"I totally understand. I saw the whole thing."

Denny l ift ed me. Denny hel d me.

"What can I do?"

"I'm several blocks from home. He'oo heavy to carr Will you drive me?"

"Sur e, but —"

"You tried to stop. The street is snowy

"I 've never hit a dog before."

"You just clipped him."

"I 'm t ot al l y fr eaking—"

"He's more scared t han he is anyt hing el se."

"I 've never hit—"

"What just happened is n'import ant," Denny said. "Lætt'hink about what 's going to happen next. Get in your car

"Yeah," the boy said. He was just a boyA teenager "Where I should go?"

"Ever yt hing' fine," Denny said, sliding int ot he backseat with me on his lap. "Tike a deep breath and les' drive."

Ayr t on Senna did not have t o die.

This came to me in a flash as I payhimpering in pain, in the backs eat of Denny's car on the way to the animal hospital that night. It came to on the Grand Prix circuit in the town of I mol a. I nathhauffel lo corner Senna did not have to die. He could have walked away

Sat ur dayt he day before the race, Senna'friend and protégé Rubens Barrichello was seriously injured in an accident. Another dRiveand Ratzenberger, was killed during a practice session. Senna was very upset about the safety conditions of the track. He spent Sundaye morning, assembling the other drivers to form a new drivearfety group; Senna was elected the head of the group.

People say that he was so ambival ent about that raceath Marino Grand Prix, that he thought seriously of retiring as a driver on Sunday morning. He almost quit. He almost walked away

But he did not walk awayHe raced, that fat eful first day of May in 1994. And when his car failed to turn in at the fable ach burello corner corner known for its excessive danger and speed, his car left the trackanearly one hundred ninety miles per hour and struck a concrete barrier was killed instantly by a piece of suspension that penetrated his helma

Or he died in the helicopt er on the way to the hospital.

Or he died on the track, after they had pulled him out of the wrecka

Enigmatic is Art on Senna, in death as well as in life.

To this daythere is still great controversy over his death. On-boar camera foot age mysteriously disappear Adcounts of his death dfered. The politics of the Fédération I nternationale del'Automobile came ir play I t is true that, in I, ifal ylriver dies while on the track, the death is investigated immediately and the race is stopped. I t is true that, if a r were to be stopped in such a waynillions of dollars would be lost by tl FIA, its sponsors, the track, television revenue, and so forth. Commerwould be affected. Whereas if that same driver were to die in a helicopter for instance, en route to the hospital, the race could continue.

It is also true that the first man to reach Senna after that momen Sidney Wat kins, said: "We lift ed him from theockpit and laid him on the ground. As we did, he sighed and, although I am totally agnostic, I fel soul departed at that moment."

What is the real truth regarding the dear Alynot fon Senna, who was only thirty-four years old?

I know the truth, and I will tell you now:

He was admired, loved, cheered, honored, respected. In life as well death. A great man, he is. A great man, he was. A great man, he will be.

He died that day because his body had served its purpose. His soul h done what it came to do, learned what it came to learn, and then was fr leave. And I knews Denny sped me toward the doctor who would fix m that if I had already accomplished what I set out to accomplish here earth, if I had already learned what I was meant to learn, I would hat the curb one second later than I had, and I would have been killed inst by that car

But I was not killed. Because I was not finished. I still had work

Separate entrances for cats and dogshat's what I remember most. And still another entrance for infectious animals, which did not discriminat genus. Apparently, dogs and cats are equal when they are infectious.

I remember the doct or painfully manipul at ing my hips. Then he gav me a shot and I was very much as leep.

When I awoke, I was still groby no longer in pain. I heard snippe of conversation. The still groby no longer in pain. I heard snippe of conversation. The still groby no longer in pain. I heard snippe of conversation. The still groby no longer in pain. I heard snippe of conversation. The still groby no longer in pain. I heard snippe of conversation. The shold grow and "chronic art hritis," and "nondisplaced fracture of the pel vic bone." Others like "replacement surgery" and "sal vage operation," "knit ting," and "pain threshold," "cal cification," and "fusing." And my favorite, "old."

Denny carried me to the lobby and laid me down on the brown carpeting, which was somehow comforting in the dim roofine assist ant spoke to him and said more thingshat were confusing to me due to my drugged state. "X-ray "Sedative." "Examination and diagnosis." "Cortisone injection." "Pain medications." "Night time egency fee." And, of course, "Eight hundred twelve dollars."

Denny handed the assistant a credit card. He kneel ed down and stromy head.

"You'll be all right, Zo," he said.oftYcracked your pelvis, but it will heal. You'll just take it easy for a while, and then you'll be good as new

"Mr. Swift?"

Denny stood and returned to the counter

"Your card has been declined."

Denny st ifened.

"That's not possible."

"Do you have anot her card?"

"Her e."

They bot h wat ched t he bl ue machine t hat t ook t he cards, and a few moment s l at et he as sist ant shook his head.

"You've exceeded your limit."

Denny frowned and took out another card.

"Here's my ATM card. I t will work."

They wait ed again. Same result.

"That's not right," Denny said. I could hear his breath quicken, his beat fast er"I just deposited my paycheck. Maybe it has releared yet."

The doct or appear ed from the back.

"A probl em?" he as ked.

"Look, I have three hundred dollars from when I deposited my che took some of it out in cash. Here."

Denny fanned bills in front of the doct or

"They must be holding the rest of the check or something, waiting for to clear" Denny said, his voice sounding panicky "I know I have money in that account. Or I can transfer some into it tomorrow morning from n savings."

"Rel ax, Denny" the doct or said. "I'm sur sijust a misunder standing

He said to the assistant, f'We MrSwift a receipt for the three hundr and I eave a note for Susan to run the card in the morning for the bal and

The assist ant reached out and took Densnycash. Denny wat ched closely as the young man wrote up the receipt.

"Coul d I keep t went y of it?" Denny as ked hes it ant low ul d see his lip quivering. He was exhaust ed and shaken and embarrassed. "I need to pur some gas in my car"

The assist ant looked to the doctword lower ed his eyes and nodded silently and turned awayalling good night over his shoul de he assist ant handed Denny a twenty-dollar bill and a receipt, and Denny carried me the car

When we got home and Denny pl aced me on my bed, he sat in the darl room, lit only by the street lamps out side, and he held his head in his h for a long time.

"I cant'," he said. "I cant'keep going."

I looked up, and he was talking to me. He was looking at me.

"They won," he said. "You see?"

How could I respond? What could I say?

"I can't even a for d to take care of you," he said to me. "I dan't en affor d gas for my car! 've got not hing left, Enzo. Thernot hing left."

Oh, how I wished I could speak. How I wished for thumbs. I could grabbed his shirt coll ar could have pulled him close to me, so close he

could feel my breath on his skin, and I could have said to him, "This is jacrisis. A flash! Aingle match struck against the implacable darkness time! You are the one who taught me to never give upout aught me that new possibilities emge for those who are prepared, for those who are ready. You have to believe!"

But I couldn's ay that. I could only look at him.

"I tried," he said.

He said that because he coul dn'hear me. Because he had not heard a word I 'd just said. Because I am a dog.

"You are my wit ness," he said. "I tried."

If I could have stood on my hind legs. If I could have raised my hand held him. If I could have spoken to him.

"I have notwi tnessed" I would have said. "Im wi tnessi ng"

And he would have understood what I meant. And he would have realized.

But he could not hear me. Because I am what I am.

And so he returned his head to his hands and he sat.

I provided not hing.

He was al one.

Days lat erA week. Two. I don't know Aft er Dennys deflat ion, t ime mean little to me; he looked sickleyhad no energy, no life for ce, and so neit her did I. At a point when my hips still bot her ed me—not so long as to ha heal ed, not so soon that the pain was acute—we went to visit Mike and Tony.

They didn't live far from us. Their house was small but reflected a different level of income; They had stood in the right place at the right t Denny once told me, and would never have to worry about money again. Such is life. Such is manifesting. Our car goes where your eyes go.

We sat in their kit chen, Denny with a cup of tea and a manil a folder before him. Tony wasn't present. Mike paced nervously

"I ts't he right decision, Den," Mike said. "I t ot all y support you."

Denny didn't move, didn't speak, just stared dully at the fol der

"This is your yout h," Mike said. "This is your time. Principle is import ant, but so is your life. So is your reput at ion."

Denny nodded.

"Lawr ence got what you want ed him to get, right?"

Denny nodded.

"Same visit at ion schedul e but with two weeks in the summer and or week over Christ mas break, and the February school break?" Mike aske

Denny nodded.

"And you don't have to pay support anymore. They'll put her in a private school on Mercer I sland. And they'll pay for her college educ

Denny nodded.

"And they'll settle for misdemeanor har assment and probation; no offense on your record."

Denny nodded.

"Denny," Mike said serious l, ý you'r e a smart guyOne of the smart est guyS I 've ever met. Let me tell you, this is a smart deci**siokn\Delta** w that, right?"

Denny l ooked confused for a moment, scanned the tablet op, checked own hands.

"I need a pen," he said.

Mike r eached behind him t o t he t el ephone t abl e and picked up a pen. handed it t o Denny

Denny hesit at ed, his hand poised over the documents in the follder looked up at Mike.

"I feel like they've sliced open my gut s, Mike. Like they've sliced I open and cut out my intestines and I 'll have to carry around a plastic bag for the rest of my life. For the rest of my life, I 'll have this plast of shit tied to my waist and a hose, and whenever I empty my shit-bag i the toil et, I 'll have to think about how they cut me open and gut ted m

just lay there with a dead smile on my face and saide! W, at least I 'm no broke.'"

Mike seemed at a loss. "b tr'ough," he said.

"Yeah," Denny agreed. "I t'r ough. Nice pen."

Denny hel d up t he pen. I t was one of t hose souvenir pens wit h t he sl iding t hing in t he pl ast ic t op wit h t he l iquid.

"Woodl and Par k Zoo," Mike said.

I looked closeFhe top of the pen. A little plastic savannah. The slithing? A zebra. When Denny tipped the pen, the zebra slid across the plsavannah. The zebra is everywhere.

I suddenly real ized. The zebra. It is not something outside of us. T zebra is something *nsi de*of us. Our fears. Our own self-destructive nat u The zebra is the worst part of us when we are face-to-face with our wortimes. The demon is us!

Denny brought the tip of the pent othe paper and I could see the zesliding forward, inching toward the signature line, and I knew it twasn' Denny who was signing. I was the zebra! Denny would never give uphis daughter for a few weeks of summer vacation and an exemption from chis support payments!

I was an old dog. Recently hit by a.cAmd yet I mustered what I could, and the pain medication Denny had given me earlier helped with trest. I pushed up onto his lap with my paws. I reached out with my tea And the next thing I knew was standing at the kitchen door with the papers in my mouth and both Mike and Denny staring at me, completely stunned.

"Enzo!" Denny commanded. "Dr op it!"

I refused.

"Enzo! Dr op!" he yel l ed.

I shook my head.

"Come her e, boy!" Mike said.

I looked over at him; he was holding a banana. Playing good copto Denny's bad cop. Which was totally unfalle knew how much I loved bananas. But still, I refused.

"Enzo, get the hell over here!" Denny shout ed, and hell unged at me.

I slipped away

It was a low-speed chase, to be sure, my mobil it y being restricted was. But it was a chase nonet heless. One in which I feint ed and dodged slid and evaded the hands that grasped for my coll are ldthem of

I still had the papers, even when they cornered me in the living roc Even when they were about to catch me and est the papers from my jaw I had a chance. I was trapped, I knownt Denny taught me that the race isn't over until the checker flies. I looked around and not iced that one windows was open. It was no pen much, and there was a screen on it, but was open, and that was enough.

Despit e all of my pain, I lungedit Wall of my might, I dove. I clear the opening; I crashed into that screen and through it. And suddenly I on the porch. I scurried into the backyard.

Mike and Denny flew out the back dooppanting, and yet not pursuing. I nstead, they seemed somewhat impressed by my feat.

"He dove," Mike said, br eat hl ess.

"Out the window" Denny finished for him.

Yes, I did. I dove.

"I f we had a videot ape of t hat, we could wint enthousand dollars o *Ameri cos Funni est Home Vdeos*" Mike said.

"Give me t he paper s, Enzo," Denny said.

I shook them vigor ously in my mouth. Mike laughed at my refusal.

"I ts' not funny" Denny admonished.

"I ts' kind of funny," Mike repl ied in his defense.

"Give me t he papers," Denny repeat ed.

I dropped the papers before me and pawed at them. I dug at them. I to bury them.

Again, Mike l aughed.

Denny, however, was very angry; he gl ared at me.

"Enzo," he said. "I'm war ning you."

What could I do? Had I not made mysel f clear? Had I not communicated my message? What else was there for me to do?

One thing only I lift ed my hind leg and I urinat ed on the papers.

Gestures are all that I have.

When they saw what I had done, they coul third p themselves; they laughed. Denny and Mike. They laughed so hard. Denny laughed harder than I'd seen him laugh in year Their faces turned red. They could barel breathe. They fell to their knees and laughed until they could laugh no more.

"Okay, Enzo," Denny said. "I s'okay."

I went to him then, leaving the urine-soaked papers on the grass.

"Call Lawrence," Mike said to DenntyHe'll print them again and you can sign them."

Denny st ood.

"No," he said, "I'm with Enzo. I piss on their settlement, toot I decare how smart it is for me to sign it. I didn'anything wrong, and I'm not giving up. I'm never giving up."

"They'r e going t o be mad," Mike said wit h a sigh.

"Screw them," Denny said. "I'm going to win this thing or I'm goin run out of fuel on the last lap. But I'm not going to quit. I promised! I'm not going to quit."

When we got home, Denny gave me a bat h and t owel ed me bf Aft er war d, he t ur ned on t he TV in t he l iving r oom.

"What's your favor it e?" he asked, looking at the shelf of videot apes kept, all the races we loved to watch toget Aer, here's one you like."

He started the tapeyAt on Senna driving the Grand Prix of Monaco in 1984, slicing through the rain in pursuit of the raceleAderin Prost. Senna would have wont hat race, had they not stopped it because of the conditions; when it rained, it never rained on Senna.

We wat ched the race together without pause, side by side, Denny and me.

The summer of my t enth birthday came along and there was a sense of bal ance to our lives, though none of completenes **e**.sWIll spent alternat weekends with Zoë, who had grown so tall receptable who never let a moment pass without questioning an assumption or challenging a theor offering an insight that made Denny smile with pride.

My hips had heal ed poorly from my accident, but I was determined to cost Denny any more moneyas I had at the animal hospital that night pushed through the pain, which at times prevented me from sleeping through the nights. I tried my best to keep up with the pace of life; my mobil it y was severely limited and I could gall op or cant, but I could still trot fairly well. I felt that I fpmlyleadloff it, as I sometimes hear people who knew my backgroundcomment on how frisky I looked or how dogs in general heal quicklyndeasily adapt to their disabilities.

Money was still a constant struggle for us, since Denny had to give Evil Twins a portion of his paycheck, and MiLawrence, the level headed lawyer, always demanded that Denny'account be kept up to date. Fortunatel Denny's bosses were generous in allowing him to change his schedule frequently so he could attend his various meetings, and also scould teach driving on certain days at Pacific Raceways, which was an eaway for Denny to make more money to pay for his defense.

Somet imes, on his driving school days, Denny would take me with hit to the track, and while I was never allowed to ride with him, I did enj sitting in the stands and watching him teach. I became known as a bit o track dog, and I especially liked trotting through the paddock, looking latest fashion in cars purchased by the rich young men and women whos bank accounts were fed with heaping piles of technology monies. From I nimble Lot us Exige to the classic Porsche to the more flamboyant Lamborghini, there was always something good to see.

On a hot day at the end of J ulwe were teaching, I remembered while they were all out on the course, I watched as a beautiful red Fe F 430 drove through the paddock and up to the school headquarters. A small, older man climbed out and the owner of the school, Don Kitch, to meet him. They embraced and spoke for several minut the man strolled to the bleachers to get a view of the track, and Don radioed to corner workers to checker the session and bring in the students for lubreak.

As the drivers climbed out of their vehicles and the instructors gathem helpful comments and pointers, Don called for Dewhy approached, as did I, curious about what was going on.

"I need a favor" Don said to Denny

And suddenly the small man with the Ferrari was with us.

"You remember Luca Pant oni, don'you?" Don as ked. "We came to dinner at your place a couple of years ago."

"Of course," Denny said, shaking Luca' hand.

"Your wife cooked a delight ful dinner Luca said. "I remember it stil Please accept my sincere and heart felt condolences."

When I heard him speak with his I talian accent, I recognized him immediately The man from Ferrari.

"Thank you," Denny said quiet l.y

"Luca would like you to show him our track," Don saidou Yan grab a sandwich bet ween sessions, right b Ydon't need lunch."

"No problem," Denny said, pulling on his hel met and walking to the passenger side of the exquisite automobile.

"Mr. Swift," Luca called out Perhaps you would do methe favor of allowing meto be the passenger so that I may see more."

Sur pr is ed, Denny l ooked at Don.

"You want me to drivehi scar?" he asked. After all, the F 430 is price at nearly a quarter of a million dollars.

"I accept full liabil"itLyuca said.

Don nodded.

"I 'd be pl eas ed t o," Denny said, and he cl imbed int o t he cockpit.

It was an extremely beautiful, **and** it was out fitted not for street ubut for the track, with ceramic brakerotors, one-piece FIA homologat racing seats and harnesses, a full roll cage, and, as I had suspected, F paddle shifter The two menstrapped in and Denny pressed the electron start button and the car fired to life.

Ah, what a sound. The whine of the fant astic engine layered over the throaty rumble of the massive exhaust. Denny flicked the paddle shift ϵ they cruised slowly through the paddock toward the track entrance.

I followed Don into the school classroom, where the students were clut ching thick hunks of a giant sandwich, chewing and eating and laughing, their intense morning of track time having injected a week' worth of joy into their lives.

"I f you drivers want to see something special," Don said, "grab you sandwiches and come out to the bleachers. There'l unch session going on."

The Ferrari was the only car on the track, as the track was usually closed during the lunch hou But this was a special occasion.

"What's going on?" one of the other instructors asked Don.

"Denny's got an audit ion," Don repl ied crypt ical ly

We all went out to the bleachers in time to see Denny come around 9 and streak down the straight.

"I figure it will take him three laps to learn the sequent ia!" Domite said.

Sur e enough, Denny started slowl jke he had driven with me back at Thunder hill. Oh, how I wished I could have traded places with Luca, tlucky dog! To be copil of to Denny in an F 430 must be an amazing experience.

He was driving easybut as he came around for the third time, there a not iceable change to the calt was no longer a calt was a red bludt no longer whined, it screamed as it shot down the straight away so fast the students laughed at each other as if someone had just told a dirty joke. Denny was laying down a hot lap.

A minutelateso fast one wondered if he had taken a short cut, the Ferrari popped out of the cluster of trees at the exit of turn 7, crest ir rise until its suspension was totally extended, and then <code>pwick-pock-pock</code> sound we heard the electronic clutch quickly downshift from sixtl third and we saw the ceramic brakerotors glow red between the spoke the magnesium wheels, and then we heard the throttle open full and watched the car slam through the sweeping turn 8 as if it were a rocket as if it were on rails, its hot rubber racing-compound tires grabbing the greasy pavement like & cro, and then <code>-pock!</code>—shifting up and <code>-pock!</code>—blasting past us at turn 9 no more thaninales from the concrete barrie The Doppler effect of the passing car converted its snarl into an angry growl, and of it rocketed <code>-pock!</code>—shifting again at the Kink and it was gone.

"Hol y shit!" a st udent said.

I looked back at them, and their mouths were agameal l were silent and we could hear that sound pock, pock—as Denny set himself up for turn 5A on the backside of the track, which we could are but which we could imagine, given such wonderful sound feects, and again Denny careened past us at a million miles an hour

"How close to the edge is he?" someone asked aloud.

Don smil ed and shook his head.

"He's way past the edge," he said. "I'm sure Lucatoldhim to show what he could do, and that what he's doing." Then he turned to the group and shout ed: "DON'T YOU EVER DRI VE LI KE THADENNY I SAPROFESSI ONAL RACE CAR DRI VER AND THA'S NOT HIS CAR! HE DOESN'T HAE TO PAY FOR IT IF H BREAKS IT"

Lap aft er lap, ar ound t hey went unt il we wer e dizzy and exhaust ed f wat ching t hem. And t hen t he car slowed consider abl y—a cool -down laj and pulled off int o the paddock.

The entire class gat hered around as Denny and Luca eged from the burning hot vehicle. The students were abuzz; they touched the scal ding glass window that shiel ded the magnificent power plant and exclaimed the spect acular drive.

"Ever yone int othe classroom!" Don barked. "Wo go over corner notes from your morning sessions."

As they headed of, Don clasped Denny's shoul der firmly

"What was it like?"

"It was incredible," Denny said.

"Good for you. You deserve it."

Don went of to teach his class; Luca approached and extended his hand. I nit was a business card.

"I would like you to work for me," Luca said with his thick accent.

I sat next to Dennyhor eached down and scratched my ear out of habit.

"I appreciate that," Denny saf@But I don't hink I 'd make a very good car salesman."

"Neit her do I," Luca said.

"But you're with Ferrari."

"Yes. I work in Maranello, at Ferrari headquart enhanced wonder fultrack there."

"I see," Denny said. "So you'd like me to work...where?"

"At the track. There is some need, as often our clients would like t instruction in their new cars."

"I nstructing?"

"There is some need. But most, lyou would be testing the vehicles."

Denny's eyes got extremely gerand he sucked in a huge breath of air as did I. Was this guy saying what we thought he was saying?

"In I tall Denny said.

"Yes. You would be provided with an apart ment for you and your daught er And of course, a company car—a Fiat—as part of your compensation package."

"To live in Ital'yDenny said. "And test-drive Ferraris."

"Si ."

Denny r ol l ed his head ar ound. He t ur ned ar ound in a cir cl e, l ooked down at me, l aughed.

"Why me?" Denny as ked. "There are a thousand guys who can drive this car"

"Don Kit ch t el l s me you ar e an except ional driver in t he wet we'at h

"I am. But that canbe the reason."

"No," Luca said. "You are correct." He stared at Denhis clear blue eyes smil ing. "But I would prefer to tell you more about those reason you join me in Maranello, and I can invite you to my house for dinner

Denny nodded and chewed his lip. He tapped Luca'business card against his thumbnail.

"I appreciate your generousf**e**st," he said. "But I'm afraid certain things prevent me from leaving this country—or even this state—at t moment. So I have to decline."

"I know about your troubles," Luca said. "That is why I am here."

Denny looked up, sur prised.

"I will keep the position available for you until your situation is resolved and you can make your decision free from burden of circumstance. My telephone is on my card."

Luca smil ed and shook Dennys' hand again. He sl ipped int o the Ferra

"I wish you would tell me who enny said.

Luca hel d up his finger

"Dinner, at my home. You will under st and."

He dr ove away.

Denny shook his head in bewil der ment as the high-per for mance drivi school students engerd from the classroom and headed for their cars. D appear ed.

"Well?" he as ked.

"I don't under st and," Denny said.

"He's taken an interest in your career since he first met you," Don s "Whenever we talk, he asks how you're doing."

"Why does he care so much?" Denny as ked.

"He want s t o t el l you hims el f. Al l I can say is t hat he respect s ho you're fight ing for your daught.ër

Denny thought for a moment.

"But what if I don'win?" he as ked.

"There is no dishonor in losing the race," Don said. "There is only dishonor in not racing because you are afraid to lose." He paused. "Now to your student, Grasshoppend get the hell out on the trackat's where you belong!"

"You need to go out? Let 'go out."

He was holding my leash. He wore his jeans and a light jacket for th fall chill. He lift ed me to my unsteady feet and clipped on the leash. We went out into the darkness; I had fallen as leep but live was time for me to urinate.

I had been experiencing a decline in my health. I doknow if my accident the previous winter had knocked something loose in my plumbior if it was somehow associated with the medication that Denny gave m but I had developed an inconvenient case of urinary incontinence. After even mild activit, yloft en slept deeply and awoke having soiled my bedding. It was usually only a few dribbles, though on occasion it was extensive, and it was always horribly embarrassing.

I also was having great **flic**fulty with my hips. Once I was up and moving, once I had war med up my joints and igaments, I felt fine and wa able to move well. Howeverwhenever I slept or lay in one spot for any amount of time, my hind joints locked in place, and I found if ichift to get them moving again, or even to rise to a standing position.

The net result of my health issues was that Denny could no longer me alone for an entire workdal began visiting at lunchtime so he coul

take me out to relieve myself. He was very kind, and explained to meth he was doing it for himself: he was feeling stagnant, he said, and frustrathelawyers continued at their glacial pace, and there was nothing Den could do to speed them along, so he looked at the short walk from his to the apart ment and back as a tonic; it allowed him a certain amount o cardiovascular exercise, yes, but it also gave him a purpose; a mission; something to do other than wait.

That evening—it was around ten, I knewecause *The Amazi ng Race* had just finished—Denny took me out. The night was bracing, and I enjoyed the feeling of wakeful ness as I breathed in through my nostril energy.

We crossed Pine Street and I saw people smoking outside the Cha C Lounge. I forced myself to ignore the characteristic refused to shove my nose into the butt of another dog making the rounds. And yet urinated on the street like an animal because that was the only alternwas afforded. To be a dog.

We walked down Pine toward the cit and then she was there.

Bot h of us st opped. Whel d our breat hs. Wo young women at an out door t able at Bauhaus Books and Geoff and one of t hem was Annika.

Tempt ress! Seducer! iXen!

How awful for us to have to see this horrid girl. I want ed to leap a and take her nose in my teeth and twist! How I hat ed this young girl wat tacked my Denny with her unrestrained sexual it y and then blamed his the attack. How I despised she who would rend this family because of lown agenda. A woman scorned, indeed! Kate Hepburn would smash her with a single blow and laugh while doing it. How my anger burned.

At Bauhaus, she sat at an out door table with another girl. At this cool coffee shop in *our* neighborhood, she sat drinking coffee and smoking cigarettes! She was at least seventeen by, provesibly eight een, and was legally allowed to function in society on her ownhifically she could sit at any coffee shop in any city and stew in her wretchedness. I could hop

her. But I didn't have to deal with her—immature finger point fit ict er of wounds!

I thought we would cross the street to avoid a confront at ion, but we headed straight for helf didn't understand. Perhaps Denny hadn's een her. Perhaps he didn't know?

But I knewand so I resisted. I set my weight, I ducked my head.

"Come on, boy," Denny or der ed me. He t ugged at my l eas h.

I refused.

"Wit h me!" he snapped.

No! I would not go with him!

And t hen he l eaned down. He kneel ed and hel d my muzzl e and l ookec me in t he eyes.

"I see hert oo," he said. "Lets'handl e t his wit h dignit'y

He r el eas ed my muzzl e.

"This can work *f or* us, Zo. I want you to go up to her and l ove her mot than you've ever l oved anyone before."

I didn't under st and his strat, elegy t I acquies ced. After all, he had the leash.

As we drew abreast of her table, Denny stopped and looked surpris

"Oh, hey!" he said bright l.y

Annika l ooked up, feigning shock, clear l y having seen us, but hoping there would be no interaction.

"Denny. Good to see you!"

I played my part. I greet ed her ent husias that looked at her with great anticipation, w is something people find very appealing. But inside, I was churning. He facial makeup. Her hair Her tight sweater and heaving bosomuðk.

"Enzo!" she said.

"Hey," Denny said, "can we talk for a minute?"

Annika's friend started to get up.

"I 'll go get more **cet**," she said.

"No," Denny st opped her with a wave of his hand. "Pl ease st"ay

She hes it at ed.

"I ts' import ant that you wit ness that there is no impropriet y taken Denny expl ained. "I f you l eave, I 'll have to l eave."

The girl looked to Annika, who nodded her agreement.

"Annika," Denny said.

"Denny."

He pulled up a chair from the next table, which was empleys at down next to her

"I totally under stand wshgoing on," he said.

Which was strange, because I certainly didn't didn't understand it at all. She had attacked him. She then accused him of attacking her and because of that we only got to see Zoë on certain days of the week. Why were speaking with her rather than roasting her on a spit was unfathon to me.

"I may have given you signal s," he said. "That t' ot all y my faul t. But just because the light is green does mean you shoul drt' look bot h ways

befor e st epping int o t he st reet."

Annika screwed up her face in puzzl ement and looked to her friend.

"A met aphor" her friend said.

Ha! A met aphor she said! F ant ast ic! This one knows how to decode t English language! Wwill save her for roasting tomorrow!

"I should have handled the situation entire for dift l," Denny said. "I haven't had the chance to say this to you because we've been kept apart, I made all the mistakess'all my fault; you did not hing wrong u're an attractive woman, and I understand my noting that attractiveness—ermyself—may have signaled to you that I was available. But, you, know wasn't available. I was married to Eve. And you were far too young."

Annika dipped her head at the ment ion of Eve.

"Maybe I even thought of you as Eve for a minute," Denny said. "An maybe I looked at you like I used to look at Eve. But, Annika, while I understand how angry you must be, I wonder if you understand what' going on, what the fallout is. They wonder me have my daught. Do you realize that?"

Annika looked up at him and shrugged.

"They want me to be registered as a sextent der, and that will mean that I will always have to register with the police, wherever I live. I will never be able to see my daughter again without supervision. Did the tell you about that?"

"They said..." she said soft ! but didn't finish.

"Annika, when I saw Eve for the first time, I cottlbbeat he. I couldn't walk. I felt if she were out of my sight for a moment, I might up from a dream and find her gone. My entire world revolved around'hei

He paused, and none of us said anything for a moment. A crowd of people emerged from a rest aurant across the street and said their good

l oudl y and wit h much l aught, kais sing and hugging before t hey went their separate ways.

"It never could have worked between you and me. There are a million reasons. My daught emy age, your age, Eve. In a different time, in a different place? Maybe. But not no Not three years ago. Not reasonderful woman, and I know that you will find the right partner and will be very happy for the rest of your life."

She looked up at him, and her eyes were so big.

"I'm very sorry that it worde me, Annika," he said. "But one day you will find someone who stops the world for you as Eve stopped the worme. I promise you."

She l ooked deepl y int o her l at t e.

"Zoë's my daught er" he said. "I love her like your fat her loves you. Please, Annika, don't take her away from me."

Annika didn't look up from her cofe, but I glanced at her friendeals hung on her lower lids.

We paused a moment, and then we turned and walked away briskloyd Denny's gait seemed lighter than it had been for years.

"I think she heard me," he said.

I thought so, too, but how could I respond? I barked twice.

He looked at me and laughed.

"F ast er?" he as ked.

I bar ked t wice again.

"F ast ert hen," he said. "Lets'go!" And we trotted the rest of the way home.

The coupl e who stood in the door way were entirely for eight ome. They were old and frail. They wore threadbare clothing. They toted old fabruit cases that bulged awkwar.dThey smelled of mothballs and feef.

Denny embraced the woman and kissed her cheek. He picked up her bag with one hand and shook the mans' hand with the other hey shuffled into the apart ment and Denny took their coats.

"Your room is in here," he said to them, carrying their bags into the bedroom. "I'll sleep on the sofa."

Neither of them said a word. He was bald except for a crescent of stringy black hail his skull was long and narr. Mais eyes were sunken like his cheeks; his face was covered with a gray bristlethat looked painful woman had white hair that was quitethin and left most of her scalp vis She wore sunglasses, even in the apart ment, and she often stood complatill and waited until the man was next to her before she moved.

She whis per ed int o t he man'ear.

"Your mot her would like to use the washroom," the man said.

"I 'll show hërDenny said. He st ood next to the woman and held out his arm.

"I 'l khow her," t he man said.

The woman took the mans arm, and he led her toward the hall where the bathroom was.

"The light switch is hidden behind the hand towel," Denny said.

"She doesn't need a light switch," the man said.

As they went into the bathroom, Denny turned away and rubbed his face with the palms of his hands.

"Good to see you," he said into his hands. "Is been so long."

Had I known I was meeting Densyparents, I might have acted more receptive to these strangers. I had been given no advance notice, no warning, and so my surprise was completely justified. Still, I would have ferred to greet them like family

They st ayed with us for three days, and they hardly left the apart m F or the after noon on one of those days, Denny retrieved Zoë, who was s pretty with her hair in ribbons and a nice dress, and who had obviously coached by Denny, as she willingly sat for quite along time on the coucand allowed Dennys mother to explore the terrain of her face with her hands. Tears ran down Dennys mother's cheeks during the entire encounter, raindrops spotting Zoseflowerprint dress.

Our meal s were prepared by Dennand were simple in nature: broil ed steaks, steamed string beans, boil ed pot at Tokes y were eat en in silence. The fact that three people could occupy such a small apart ment and sp so few words was quite strange to me.

Denny's fat her lost some of his gfredge while he was with us, and he even smiled at Denny a few times. Once, in the silence of the apart ment while I sat in my corner watching the Space Needle elevators, he came stood behind me.

"What do you see, boy?" he asked quiet I and he touched the crown of my head and his fingers scratched at my ears just the way Denny does. It the touch of a son is so like the touch of his father

I looked back at him.

"You take good care of him," he said.

And I couldn't ell if he was talking to me or to DeAmyl if he was talking to me, did he mean it as a command or as an acknowl edgment? Thuman language, as precise as it is with its thousands of words, can still so wonder fully vague.

On the last night of their visit, Dennfylther handed Denny an envel ope.

"Open it," he said.

Denny did as instructed, and looked at the contents.

"Where the hell did this come from?" he asked.

"It came from us," his fat her replied.

"You don't have any money"

"We have a house. We have a farm."

"You can't sell your house!" Denny exclaimed.

"We didn't," his fat her said. "They call it a reverse mort gage. The b will get our house when we die, but we thought you needed the money n more than you would lat, exo."

Denny looked up at his fat hewho was quit e t al l and ver y t hin; his cl ot hes draped on him like cl ot hes on a scarecrow

"Dad—" Denny started, but his eyes filled with tears and he could shake his head. His father reached for him and embraced him, held him

close and stroked his hair with long fingers and fingernails that **be**d la pale hal f-moons near the quick.

"We never did right by you," his fat her said. "EWMever did right. This makes it right."

They left the next morning. Like the last strong autumn wind that the trees until the remaining leaves fall, brief but powerful was their signaling that the season had changed, and soon, life would begin again.

A driver must have faith. In his talent, his judgment, the judgment of taround him, physics. Adriver must have faith in his crewis car, his tires, his brakes, himself.

The apex set s up wrong. He is for ced of bis usual line. He carries too much speed. His tires have lost grip. The track has gotten grandyhe suddenly finds himself at turn exit with no more track and too much speed.

As the gravel traprushes at him, the driver must make decisions tl will impact his race, his futur **e**. (Tuck in would be devast at ing: wrenchin the front wheels against their nature will only spin. the chart is equally bad, taking grip away from the rear of the chart is to be done?

The driver must accept his fate. He must accept the fact that mist a have been made. Misjudgments. Poor desiions. A confluence of circumstance has landed him in this position. A driver must accept it albe willing to pay the price for it. He must getorfack.

To dump t wo wheels. Even fould ts' an awful feeling, both as a driver and as a competit or The gravel that kicks up against the under carriage. The feeling of swimming in muck. While his wheels are for the track, other drivers are passing him. They are taking his spot, continuing at speed. Che is slowing down.

At this moment, a driver feels at remendous crisismusseget back on the gas. Hemust get back on the track.

Oh! The folly!

Consider the drivers who have been taken out of races by snapping t steering wheels, by overcorrecting to extremes and spinning their cars front of their competitorst Arible position to find onesel fin—

A winner, a champion, will accept his fate. He will continue with his wheels in the dirt. He will do his best to maint ain his line and gradual himself back on the track when it is safe to do ses, Yhe loses a few place in the race. Yes, he is at a disadvant age. But he is still racing. He is still alive.

The race is long. It is better to drive within oneself and finish the behind the others than it is to drive too hard and crash.

So much informat ion came out in the following days, thanks to Mike, wlpl agued Denny with questions until he answered. About his most her blindness, which came on when Denny was a boy; he cared for her until he left home after high school. About how his father told Denny that if he didn't stay to help with the farm and his most hees houldn't bother keeping in touch at all. About how Denny called every Christ mas for y until his mother finally answered the phone and list ened without speal For years, until she finally asked how he was doing and if he was happy

I learned that his parents had not paid for the testing program in I as Denny had claimed; he paid for that with a home equity loan. I learn that his parents had not contributed to the sponsorship of the touring season, as Denny had said; he paid for that with a second mort gage, whicl Eve had encouraged.

Al ways pushing the extremes. Finding himself broked finding himself on the telephone with his blind mot beking her for some kind of help, any kind of help, so that he could keep his daughter; and her respot hat she would give him everything if only she could meet her grandchi Her hands on Zoës hopeful face; her tears on Zoëdress.

"Such a sad st or," Mike said, pour ing himsel f anot her shot of t equil

"Act ual l," Denny said, examining his can of Diet Coke, "I believe it has a happy ending."

"All rise," the bailiff called out, such old-fashi oned formality in su contemporary setting. The new Seattle courthouse: glass walls and metal beams jutting out at all angles, conterfloors and stairs with rubber treads, and all of itlit by a strange, bluishlight.

"The Honorabl e Judge &n Ti ghem."

An el derl y man, cl ad i n a bl aæbe, strode i nto the pom. He was short and wi de, and he had a wave of gray hai r swept to one si de of hi s head. I dark, bushy eyebpows hung over hi s smal l eyes l i ke hai ry caterpi l l ars; l spoke wi th an I ri sh l i l t.

"Si t," he commanded. "Let us begi n."

Thus, the trial commenced. At least in my mind. I twgive you all the details because I danknow them. I wastn't here because I am a dog, and dogs are not allowed in court. The only impressions I have of the trial the fant astic images and scenes I invented in my dreams. The only facts know are the ones I gathered from Demy'et elling of events; my only ic of a courtroom, as I have said before, is what I learned from watching favor it e movies and television shows. I pieced together those days as c

conjures a partially completed jigs aw puzzle—the frame is finished, the corners filled in, but handfuls of the heart and belly are missing.

The first day of the trial was devoted to pretrial motions, the seco jury selection. Denny and Mike didn't alk much about those events, so I assume everything went as expected. Both dayony and Mike arrived at our apart ment early in the morning; Mike escorted Denny to court whi Tony stayed behind to look after me.

Tony and I didn't do much with our time toget here sat and read the paper, or went for short walks, or ventured to Bauhaus so he could che his e-mail on their free wi-fi net work. I likendy T despite the fact that he had washed my dog years earlie Or may be because he had. That dog, poor thing, finally went the way of all flesh and fell to threads and was to into the trash bin without ceremown hout eulogy My dog," was all I could think to say My dog. And I watched Denny drop it into the bin and close the drawe and that was that.

On the third morning, there was a definite change in the air whenyT and Mike arrived. There was much more tension, fewer banal pleasantri no one-liners. It was the day the case was to begin in earnest, and we wall filled with trepidation. Demograture was at stake, and it was no laughing matter

Appar ent l,yl l at er l ear ned,. Mrawr ence del iver ed an impassioned opening stat ement. He agreed with the prosecutsions's ert ion that sexual mol est at ion is about powerut he point ed out that baseless all egation i equally destructive weapon, and is just as much about powerd he pl edged to prove Denny innocent of the characteristics.

The prosecut ion led of their case with a parade of witnesses, all of whom had stayed with us that week in the hop, each of them test if ying to Denny's inappropriate flirt at ious manner and his predaiterstal king of Annika. Yes, they agreed, she was playing the game with him, but she was child! ("As was Lolita!" Spencer Tacy might have shouted.) Denny was ar intelligent, strong, good-looking man, the witnesses said, and should have how better One by one, they depicted a world in which Denny maneuvered sneakily in order to be with Annika, to brush against the

hold her hand illicit. Eyach convincing wit ness was followed by another even more convincing, and another after that. Until, finalheyal leged victim herself was called to take the stand.

Wearing a subdued skirt and high-collared blouse, their pinned back and eyes downcast, Annika proceeded to catalog every look, glance, and breath, every incidental touch and near miss. She admitted that she was willing—even eager—accomplice, but insisted that, as a child, she had idea what she was getting herselfint/osibly upset, she spoke about how the entire episode had tormented her ever since.

Tor ment ed her in what way would have asked, by her innocence, or by her guilt? But I wasn'here to pose the question. By the time Annika direct examination was finished, not a person in the courtroom, save De himself, was absolutely certain that he had not taken liberties with he week. And even Denny's confidence in himself was shaken.

Early that afternoon—it Wasdnesday—the weather was oppressive. The clouds were heavybut the sky refused to rainoffy and I walked down to Bauhaus so he could get his cofee. We sat outside and stared at the fict af on Pine Street until my mind shut down and I lost track of time.

"Enzo—"

I raised my head. Thy pocket ed his cell phone.

"That was Mike. The prosecut or asked for a special recess. Sometshi going on."

He paused, waiting for my response. I said not hing.

"What should we do?" he asked.

I barked t wice. We should go.

Tony closed up his computer and got his bag toget. We hurried down Pine and across the freeway overpass. He was moving very quicklind I

had a hard time keeping up. When he felt the leash go taut, he looked ba at me and slowed. "Whave to hurry if we want to catch them," he said. I want ed to catch them, too. But my hips ached see Mistled past the Paramount Theater to Fift he hue. We rushed south, zigzagging from Walk to Don't Walk signals until we reached the plaza before the court house on Third Aenue.

Mike and Denny were not there. Only a small cluster of people in c corner of the plaza, speaking **ge**ntlygesturing with agit at ion. We arted toward them. Perhaps they knew what was going on. But at that momer the rain began to fall. The group immediately disbanded, and I saw Anramong them. Her face was drawn and pale; she was crying. When she sav me, she winced, turned away quickly and vanished into the building.

Why was she so upset? I didnknow but it made me very nervous. What could be going on inside that building, in the dark chambers of justice? What might she have said to further incriminate Denny and des his life? How I prayed for some kind of intervention, for the spirit of Gregory Peck or Jimmy Stewart or Raul Julia to descend on the plazalead us to the truth. For Paul Newman or Denzesh Wegt on to step out of a passing bus and deliver a rousing speech that would set everything ri

Tony and I took refuge under neat h an awning; we stood tensely Something was going on, and I didn'know what it was. I wished that I could have injected myself into the process, snuck into the courtroom, on a table, and made my voice heard. But my participation was not part the plan.

"I ts' done now," Tony said. "We can't change whats' al ready been decided."

Can't we? I wonder ed. Even just a little? Can we not will ourselv achieve the impossible? Can we not use the power of our life force to change something: one small thing, one insignificant moment, one breat one gesture? I s there nothing we can do to change what is around us?

My legs were so heavy I could no longer st and; I lay on the wet concrete, and I fell into an unst eady sleep filled with very strange dr

"Ladi es and gentl emen of the juryMr. Lawrence said, standing beforthe jury box. "It is important to note that the case put forth by thospecution is entionly ciaumstantial. There is no evidence whatsoever of violation. I truth of what really happened that night is known by two people aloneo T people, and a dog."

"A dog?" the judge asked inedulously

"Yes, Judge Van Ti ghem," Mr Lawrence said, stepping forth boldly "The entire event was witnessed by the defendantdog. I call to the stand Enzo!"

"I object!" the posecutor barked.

"Sustai ned," the j udge sai d. "For the ti me bei ng."

He produced a lage volume form beneath his desk and paged though it at length, reading many passages.

"Does this dog speak?" the judge asked MŁ awrence, his head still buried in the book.

"Wi th the help of a voice synthesi, ZeMr. Lawrence said, "yes, the dog speaks."

"I object!" the posecutor pi ped i n.

"Not yet," the j udge sai d. "All me about this device, Mrawrence."

"We've borrowed a special voice synthesizer that was developed for Stephen Hawking," MrLawrence continued. "By rading the electrical pulses of the inner brain—"

"Enough! You had me at 'Stephen Hawki ng'!"

"Wi th this device, the dog can speak," Mrawrence said.

The j udge cl apped shut hi s massi ve tome.

"Obj ecti on overrul ed. Lætiave hi m, then, thi s dog! Let have hi m!"

The room was filled with hureds of people, and I was sitting on the witness stand, strapped to Stephen Hawking voice simulator; the judge swore me in.

"Do you swear to tell the truth, the whole truth, and nothing but the truth, so help you God?"

"I do," I said in my scratchmetallic voice, which was not at all as had i magined. I had always hoped I would sound mormanding and present, like James Earl Jones.

"Mr. Lawrence," the judge said, astoni shed. & Wr wi tness."

"Enzo," Mr. Lawrence said, "you were present for the alleged molestation?"

"I was," I sai d.

Suddenly there was silence in the gall. Exyddenly no one dard to speak, to titteror even to breathe. I was talking, and they went is stening.

"Tell us in your own wats what you witnessed in MrSwift' bedroom that night."

"I will tell you," I said. "But first, with permission, I would like address the court."

"You may," the j udge sai d.

"Inside each of uses ides the truth," I began, "the absolute truth. But sometimes the truth is hidden in a hall of orism Sometimes we believe we are viewing the oral thing, when in fact we caviewing a facsimile, a distortion. As I listen to this trial, I comminded of the climactic scene of James Bond film The Man with the Golden Gun James Bond escaped his hall of miors by breaking the glass, shattering the illusions, until only

true villain stood befechim. We, too, must shatter the mirors. We must look into ourselves and out the distortions until that thing which we know in our hearts is perfect and true, stands befours. Only then will justice be served."

I looked over the faces in the mand saw each of them considering my words, nodding appreciatively

"Nothing happened between them," I said, final Nothing at all."

"But we've heard so much of these accusations," ML awrence said.

"Your Honor"—I rai sed my voi ce—"Ladi es and gentlemen of the, jIu assure you that my master, Denni s Swift, in no way acted in appri ately around this young ladyAnni ka. It was clear to me that she loved him mon than anything in the world, and she of perherself to him. He declined he of ferAfter driving us over a harming mountain pass, after exhausting himself, draining himself of all physicgly iemender to deliver us safely home, Denny is guilty only of falling as Parapika, this girl, this woman, as unaware of the ramifications of her actions as she might have been, assaulted my Denny"

A murmur rose f om the gal l er.y

"Mi ss Anni ka, i s thi s true?" the j udge demanded.

"I t i s true,"Anni ka epl i ed.

"Do you di savow these accusati ons?" & Ti ghem asked.

"I do," she cri ed:I'm so sorry f or the pai n I've put you al lothgh. I di savow!"

"This is a stunningervel at ion!" What Ti ghem announced. "Enzo the dog has spoken! The truth is known. This case is dismissed. More if t is fe to go, and he is awarded custody of his daughte?"

I leapt form the witness stand and embraced Denny and Zoë. At last, we were a family together again.

"I ts' over."

My mast ers voice.

I opened my eyes. Denny was flanked by Mike and MŁ awr ence, who held a verylage umbrella. How much time had passed, I didiknow But Tony and I were both very wet from the rain.

"That recess was the longest forty-five minutes of my life," Denny

I wait ed for his answer

"She recant ed," he said. "They dropped the chaes."

He fought it, I knowbut it was hard for him to breat he.

"They dropped the chages, and I'm free."

Denny might have been able to hold it for we had been alone, but Mike wrapped him in a hug, and Denny unleashed the years of tears that had been dammed behind mud and determination and the ability to alway find another finger to stick in the leaking dike. He cried so hard.

"Thank you, Mr. Lawrence," Tony said, shaking Mr Lawrence's hand. "You did a fant ast ic job."

Mr. Lawrence smil ed, per haps for the first time in his life. "They happy sical evidence," he said. "All they had was Annika't est imonyl could tell, on direct, she was wavering—there was something more she want say—so I went after her on cross, and she broke down. She said that up until now she'd been telling people what she happened might have happened. Today, she admitted that nothing happened at allt. Now there test imonyit would have been fool ish for the prosecutor to move for war with the case."

Is that what she testified? I wondered where she was, what she was thinking. I glanced around the plaza and spotted her leaving the courtl

wit h her famil. She seemed somehow fragil e.

She looked over and saw us. She was not a bad person, I knew then. One can never be angry at another driver for a track incident. One can obe upset at himself for being caught in the wrong place at the wrong till

She gave a quick wave meant for Dennybut I was the only one who saw because I was the only one looking. So I barked to let her know

"You've got a good mast ent here," Tony said to me, his attention still our immediate circle.

He was right. I have the best master

I wat ched Denny as he held on to Mike and swayed back and forth, feeling the relief, the release, knowing that another path might have be easier for him to travel, but that it cotulpos's ibly have offered a more satisfying conclusion.

The very next dayMr. Lawrence informed Denny that the Evilvins had dropped their cust ody suit. Zoë was his. The instantant and request ed fortyeight hours to assemble her belongings and spend a little more time w before delivering her to Dennbut he was under no obligation to agree.

Denny coul d have been mean. He coul d have been spit eful. They took years of his life, they took all of his monthyey robbed him of work, they tried to destroy him. But Denny is a gentleman. Denny has compassion his fellow man. He grant edthem their request.

He was baking cookies last night in anticipation of **Z**oëët urn, making the batter from scratch like he used to do, when the phone rang. Since hands were covered wit be ticky oat meal goop, he tapped the speaker butt on the kitchen phone.

"You're on the air!" he said bright. I Thanks for calling. What on your mind?"

There was a long pause filled with static.

"I 'm cal l ing for Dennis Swift."

"This is Denny" Denny cal l ed from his cookie bowl . "How can I hel μ you?"

"This is Luca Pant oni, returning your call. From Maranello. Am I cat ching you at a bad time?"

Denny's eyebrows shot up, he smil ed at me.

"Luca! *Grazi e*, for returning my call. I 'm making cookies so I have on the speaker phone. I hope you don'mind."

"No pr obl em."

"Luca, the reason I called...The issues that were keeping me in the St at es have been resol ved."

"I can tell by the tone of your voice they were resolved to your sat is fact ion," Luca observed.

"Ver y much so," Denny said. "Yes, indeed. I was wondering if the position you ofered me earlier was still available?"

"Of course."

"My daught er and I —and my dog, Enzo—woul d ver y much l ike t o jo you for dinner in Mar anel l o, t hen."

"Your dog is named Enzo? How propit ious!"

"He is a race car driver at heart," Denny said, and smil ed at me. I love Denny so much. I know ever yt hing about him, and yet he al ways sur prises me. He called Luca!

"I look for ward to meet ing your daught er and to seeing Enzo again, Luca said. "I will have my assist ant make the arrangements. I t will l necessary to retain your services under contract. I hope you understar nature of our business, as well as the expense of developing a test driv

"I under st and," Denny replied, plopping oat meal and raisins ont o t cookie sheet.

"You do not object to a three-year commitment?" Luca as keduffY daught er will not mind living here? There is an American school, if she would prefer it to our I talian schools."

"She told me she wants to try the I talian school," Denny sæidl "W have to see how it goes. Either wæyhe knows it will be a great adventur and she's very excit ed. She's been studying a children'book I gave her that teaches some simple I talian phrases. She says she feels confident or dapizza in Maranello, and she loves pizza."

"Bene! I love pizza, too! I like the way your daught er thinks, Denn am so pleased I can be a part of your fresh start."

Denny plopped more cookies, al most as if he had **got** ten about the tel ephone call.

"My assist ant will be in touch with you, Den we will expect to see you in a few weeks."

"Yes, Luca, t hank you." Pl op, pl op."Luca."

"Si ?"

"Now will you tell me why?" Denny as ked.

Anot her long pause.

"I would prefer to tell you—"

"Yes, I knowLuca. I knowBut it would help me so much if you coulse see your way to telling me no wor my own peace of mind."

"I under st and your need," Luca said. "I will tell you. Many years when my wife passed away I al most died from grief."

"I'm sor;"yDenny said, no longer working the cookie bat teimply list ening.

"Thank you," Luca said. "It took me along time to know how to respond to people of their condolences. Such a simple thing, yet fil with much pain. I'm sure you under stand."

"I do," Denny said.

"I woul dhave died from grief, Dennyif I had not received help, if I h not found a ment or who dered me his hand. Do you underst and? My predecessor at this companyfored me a job driving cars for him. He save my life, not merely for me, but for my children as wellis.man passed away recently—he was very old—but still, sometimes I see his face, his voice, and I remember him. What hefored me is not for me to keep, but for me to give to another hat is why I feel very fortunate that I an able to offer my hand to you."

Denny stared at the phone as if he could see Luca in it.

"Thank you, Luca, for your hand, and for telling me why you have offered it."

"My friend," Luca said, "t he pl easure is entirely minel wome to Ferrari. I assure you, you will not want to leave."

They said their good-byes, and Denny pressed the button with his pinkie. He crouched down and held out his sticky hands for me, and I obligingly licked them clean.

"Somet imes I believe," he said to me as I indulged in the sweet nesh his hands, of his fingers, of his opposable thumbs. "Somet imes I really believe."

The dawn breaks gently on the horizon and spills its light over the lar life seems like it has been so long and so short at the same time. Peopl speak of a will to live. They rarely speak of a will to die. Because peop are afraid of death. Death is dark and unknown and fright ening. But not me. It is not the end.

I can hear Denny in the kit chen. I can smell what draing; he's cooking breakfast, something he used to do all the time when we were a family when Eve was with us and Zoë. For along time they have been gone, and Denny has eaten cereal.

Wit hever y bit of strengt h I have in my bddywrench mysel f to a standing position. Though my hips are frozen and my legs burn with pair hobble to the door of the bedroom.

Growing old is a pathetic thing. It is full of limit at ions and reduct happens to us all, I know; but I think that it might not have to. I thin happens to those of us who request it. And in our current mind-set, our collective ennui, it is what we have chosen to do. But one day a mutant child will be born who refuses to age, who refuses to acknowledge the limit at ions of these bodies of ours, who lives in health until he is done life, not until his body no longer supports him. He will live for hundre years, like Noah. Like Moses. This chikdgenes will be passed to his

offs pring, and more like him will foll And their genetic makeup will suppl ant the genes of those of us who need to grow old and decay before die. I believe that one day it will come to pass; however a world is beyond my purview.

"Yo, Zo!" he calls to me when he sees me. "How are you feeling?"

"Like shit," I replByut, of course, he doesn'hear me.

"I made you pancakes," he says, cheer fully

I for ce myself to wag my tail, and I really shouldarder, because the wagging jostles my bladder and I feel warm droplets of urine splash r feet.

"I ts' okay, boy," he says. "I 've got it."

He cleans up my mess and tears me a piece of pancake. I take it in m mouth, but I can'chew it, I can't aste it. It sits on my tongue limply the finally falls out of my mouth and onto the fllowhink Denny notices, but he doesn't sayanything; he keeps flipping the pancakes, setting them on rack to cool.

I don't want Denny to worry about me. I dow'ant to force him to tal me on a one-way visit to the vet. Heloves me so much. The worst thing could possibly do to Denny is make him hurt me. The concept of euthan has some merit, yes, but it is too fraught with emotion. I much prefer idea of assisted suicide, which was developed by the inspired physician I Kevorkian. I take a machine that allows an ailing elder to push a button at take responsibility for his own deathere is not hing passive about the suicide machine. A big red button. Press it or don't is a button of absolution.

My will to die. Per haps, when I am a man, I will invent a suicide machine for dogs.

When I return to this world, I will be a man. I will walk among will lick my lips with my small, dexterous tongue. I will shake hands

ot her men, grasping firmly with my opposable thumbs. And I will teappeople all that I knownd when I see a man or a woman or a child in trouble, I will extend my hand, both met aphorically and physlicavilly offer my hand. To him. To her. To you. To the world. I will be a good citizen, a good part ner in the endeavor of life that we all share.

I go to Dennyand I push my muzzl e into his thigh.

"There's my Enzo," he says.

And he reaches down out of inst inct; we've been toget **ho**rl ong, he touches the crown of my head, and his fingers scratch at the crease of n ears. The touch of a man.

```
My l egs buckl e and I fall.

"Zo?"

He is al ar med. He cr ouches over me.

"Ar e you okay?"

I am fine. I am wonder ful. I am. I am.

"Zo?"
```

He turns off the fire under the frying pan. He places his hand over my heart. The beating that he feels, if he feels anything at all, is not stror

In the past few days, everything has changed. He is going to be reun with Zoë. I would like to see that moment. They are going to I taly to To Maranello. They will live in an apart ment in the small town, and tl will drive a Fiat. Denny will be a wonderful driver for Ferrari. I can shim, already an expert on the track because he is so quick, so smarty will see his talent and they will pluck him from the ranks of test driv give him a tryout for the Formula One team. Scuderia Ferrari. They wi choose him to replace the irreplaceable Schumi.

"Try me," he will sayand they will try him.

They will see his tal ent and make him a driverd soon, he will be a Formul a One champion just likeyAt on Senna. Like Juan Manuel Fangio. Jim Clark. Like Jackie Stewart, Nelson Piquet, Alain Prost, Niki Lau Nigel Mansell. Like Michael Schumach Denny!

I would like to see that. All of it, beginning this afternoon when Z arrives and is once again together with her fat Bent I don'believe I will get the chance to see that moment. And, anywity is not for me to decide. My soul has learned what it came to learn, and all the other things ar things. We can't have everything we want. Sometimes, we simply have to believe.

"You're okay," he says. He cradl es my head in his lap. I see him.

I know this much about racing in the rain. I know it is about bal and is about anticipation and patience. I know all of the driving skills that necessary for one to be successful in the rain. But racing in the rain is a about them ind I t is about owning one own body. About believing that one's car is merely an extension of one body. About believing that the track is an extension of the cand the rain is an extension of the track, at the sky is an extension of the rain. I t is about believing that you are not you are everything. And everything is you.

Racers are often called selfish and egotistical. I myself have called car drivers selfish; I was wrong be a champion, you must have no ego at all. You must not exist as a separate ent Yoyu must give your self over to the race. You are not hing if not for your team, your cyrour shoes, your tires. Do not mist ake confidence and self-awareness for egotism.

I saw a document ary once. It was about dogs in Moingolt saidt hat the next incarnation for a dog—a dog who is ready to leave his dogness behind—is as a man.

I am ready

And yet ...

Denny is so very sad; he will miss me so much. I would rat her stay him and Zoë here in the apart ment and watch the people on the street b as they talk to each other and shake each of sherands.

"You've al ways been with me," Denny says to me. "We've al ways been my Enzo."

Yes. I have. Hes correct.

"I ts' okay," he says to me." I f you need to go nowyou can go."

I turn my head, and there, before me, is my life. My chil dhood. My world.

My world is all around me. All around the fields of Spangle, where was born. The rolling hills covered with the golden grasses that sway wind and tickle my stomach when I move over them. The sky so perfect blue and the sun so round.

This is what I would like play in those fields for a little loftger spend a little more time being me before I become someone else. This i what I would like.

And I wonder: Have I squandered my dogness? Have I for saken my nat ure for my desires? Have I made a mist ake by anticipating my fut ure shunning my present?

Per haps I have. An embarrassing deat hbed regret. Sil lfy st uf

"The first time I saw you," he says, "I knew we belonged toget her

Yes! Me, too!

"I ts' okay."

I saw a fil m once. A document ar nt he t el evision, which I wat ch a lot. Denny once t old me not to wat ch so much. I saw a document ary ab dogs in Mongol ia. I t said t hat after dogs die, t hey ret urn as men. But 1 was somet hing el se—

I feel his warm breath on my neck, his hands. He leans down to me, though I can no longer see him, he leans down to my ear

The fields are solge I could run for ever in one direct ion and then refor ever back. There is no end to these fields.

"I ts' okay, boy," he says soft l, gent l yint o my ear

—I remember! This document ary said that after a dog dies, his soul released into the world around us. His soul is released to run in the w run through the fields, enjoy the earth, the wind, the rivers, the rain, the—

When a dog dies, his soul is released to run until he is ready to be reborn. I remember

"I ts' okay."

When I am reborn as a man, I will find DenInywill find Zoë. I will walk up to them and shake their hands and tell them that Enzo says he They will see.

"You can go."

Before me I see my world: the fields around Spanghere are no fences. No buildings. No people. There is only me and the grass and the and the earth. Only me.

"I love you, boÿ

I take a few steps into the field, and it feels so good, so nice to be i cool air to smell the smells all around meet the sun on my coat. I felike I am here.

"You can go."

I gat her my strengt h and I stannoft feels good, like I have no age at all, like I am timeless. I pick up speed. I run.

"I ts' okay, Enzo."

I don't look back, but I know be't here. I bark twice because I want him to hear I want him to know feel his eyes on me but I don't urn back. Off into the field, into the vastness of the universe ahead, I run.

"You can go," he calls to me.

Fast ent he wind presses against my face as I run, fast enel my heart beat ing wildly and I barktwice to tell him, to tell everyone in the wo say faster! I barktwice so he knows, so he remember that I want now is what I 've al ways want ed.

One mor e l ap, Denny! One mor e l ap. Easter!

IMOLA, ITALY

After it is all oyafter the last race has been won, after the season' champion has been crowned, he sits alone in the infield of thamburello corner, on the grass that is soggy from many days of rain. A bright figur his Ferrari-red Nomex racing suit, which is covered with patches of the many sponsors who want him as their figurehead, their image, as the on whom they can hold before the world as their symbol, the champion sit alone. All around Japan, Brazil, around Jæarype, the world, people celebrate his victorlynthetrailers and the backrooms, the other drives ome of whom are half his age, shake their heads in amazemento. Have accomplished what he has accomplishedo Thave endured what he has endured. To have become a Formula One champion out of nowhere. At his age, I t is nothing less than a fairytale.

An electric gol f cart stops on the tarmac near him, driven by a your woman with long, gol den hailWith her in the cart are two other figures one large and one small.

The young woman climbs out and walks toward the champion.

"Dad?" she calls.

He looks to hert hough he had hoped to be alone just a little longer

"They're big fans," she says.

He smil es and rolls his eyes. The idea that he has fans at all—big c small—is very silly to him and something he has to get used to.

"No, no," she says, because she knows his thoughts al most before he can think them. "I think you'd really like to meet them."

He nods at her because she is all ways right. She beckons the two peo in the cart. A man steps out, hunched beneath a rain poncho. Then a child They walk toward the champion.

"Dení!" t he man cal l s.

He does not recognize them. He does not know them.

"Dení! Speravamo di tovarl a qui!"

"Eccomi," the champion replies.

"Dení, we are your biggest fans. Nour daught er brought us to find you She said you would not mind."

"She knows me," the champion says warmly

"My son," says the man. "He wor ships you. He talks about you al ways."

The champion looks at the bowho is small with sharp features and blue eyes and light curly hair

"Quanti anni hai? he asks.

"Ci nque," the boy replies.

"Do you race?"

"He races the karts," the father says. "He is very good. The first till sat in a kart, he knew how to drive it slvery expensive for me, but he is

so good, such a tal ent, that we do it."

"Bene, che bel l o,t'he champion says.

"Will you sign our program?" the father askse "What ched the race from the field over there. The grandst and is very expensived! Wove from Napoli."

"Certo," the champion says to the fat helde takes the program and the pen. "Come ti chi ami? Re asks the boy

"Enzo," the boy says.

The champion looks up, startled. For a moment, he doesnnove. He doesn't write. He doesn's peak.

"Enzo?" he asks, final ly

"Si," the boy says. "Mi chi amo Enzo. Anch'i o vogli o di ve**ntan** campi one."

St unned, the champion stares at the boy

"He says he want s to be a champion," the father translates, misint erpreting the pause. "Like you."

"Otti ma i dea," the champion says, but he continues staring at the bo until he realizes be been staring tool ong and shakes his head to stop himself. "Mi scusi," he says. "Your son reminds me of a good friend of mine."

He cat ches his daught es eye, then he signs the boy'program and hands it to the fat hewho reads it.

"Che cos'é?" t he fat her asks.

"My t el ephone number in Mar anel lo," t he champion says. "When you t hink your son is readycal l me. I 'll make sur e he get s proper instruct i and t he opport unit y t o drive."

"Grazi e! Grazi e mill a! Me man says. "He tal ks about you al ways. H says you are the best champion evel He says you are bette even, than Senna!"

The champion rises, his racing suit still wet from the rain. He pats boy's head and rufl es his hair The boy looks up at him.

"He is a race car driver at heart," the champion says.

"Grazie," the fat her says. "He studies all of your races on videot ap

"La macchi na va dove vanno gli occhit, lie boy says.

The champion laughs, then looks to the sky

"Si," he says. "The car goes where the eyes go. I t is true, my young friend. I t is verwery true."

<u>acknowledgments</u>

Thanks to the wonder ful people at Har, people all y Jennifer Bart Inpal Andreadis, Christine Boyd, Jonathan Burnham, Kevin Callahan, Michae Morrison, Kathy Schneider Brad Wetherell, Leslie Cohen; my fant astic team at Folio Literary Management, most notably Wheifman, Ami Greko, Adam Latham, Anna Stein; my resident experts and facilitators including but not limited to Scott Driscoll, Jasen Emmons, Joe Fuge Harrison, Soyon Im, Doug Katz, David Katzenger Don Kitch J.; Michael Lord, Layne Mayheu, Kevin O'Brien, Nick O'Connell, Luigi Orsenigo, Sandy and Steve Perlbinder Jenn Risko, Bob Rogers, Paul a Schaap, Jenni Shortridge, Marvin and Landa Stein, Dawn Stuarer, Ty Trrell, Brian Towey, Cassidy Turner, Andrea Vitalich, Kevin York, Lawrence Zola...

Cal eb, Eamon, and Dashiel 1...

and the one who makes my world possible,

Dr el l a.

About the Author

The aut horof t wonovel s, How Evan Broke Hi sHead and Other Secrets and Raven Stolethe Moon, and a pl ay Brother Jones, GARTH STEIN has also worked as a document ary filmmakHe lives in Seattle with his family

WWW.ARTOF RACI NGI NTHERAI N.COM

Visit wwwAut hor Tackercom for exclusive informat ion on your favor it e Harper Coll ins aut hor

also by garth stein

How Evan Broke Hi s Head and Other Seasts

Raven Stol e the Moon

Credits

J acket photograph @ David Sut to \mbox{We} er

J acket design by Archie Fgurson

Copyright

This book is a work of fict ion. The character sincidents, and dialogue are drawn from the author's imagination and are not to be construeds real. Any resemblance oactual events or persons, living or dead, is entirely coincidental.

THE ART OF RACI NGI NTHE RAI N.Copyright© 2008 by BrightWhiteLight,LLC.Allrights reservedunder I nternationahd Pan-AmericanCopyrightConventions.By payment of the required fees, you have been granted the non-exclusive,non-transferableight to access and read the text of this e-book on-screen. No part of this text may be reproduced, transmitted, down-loaded, decorreverseengineered, or stored nor introduced not only informations to ragend retieval system, in any form or by any means, whetherelectronic mechanical, now known or hereinafter invented, without the express written permission of HarperCollins e-books.

ePub edit ion Apr il 2008 I SBN 9780061738098

10987654321

HarperCollins e-books

About the Publisher

Australia

Har per Col l ins Publ is her s (Austral ia) Littly 25 Ryde Road (PO Box 321) Pymbl e, NSW 2073, Austral ia http://www.har.per.col.l ins.ebooks.com.au

Canada

Har per Col l ins Publ is her s Lt d. 55 Avenue Road, Suit e 2900 Tor ont o, ON, M5R, 3L2, Canada ht t p://www.har per col l ins ebooks.ca

New Zealand

Har per Col l ins Publ is her s (New Zeal and) L imit ed P.O. Box 1 Auckl and, New Zeal and ht t p://www.har per col l ins ebooks.co.nz

United Kingdom

Har per Col l ins Publ is her s Lt d. 77-85 F ul ham Pal ace Road London, W6 8J B, UK http://www.har.per.col l ins.ebooks.co.uk

United States

Har per Col l ins Publ is her s I nc. 10 East 53rd Street New York, NY 10022 http://www.harpercollinsebooks.com